EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. III.

FELICES TER ET AMPLIUS,
QUOS IRRUPTA TENET COPULA.

Γυναικὸς οὐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ ληΐζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, οὐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR C. COOKE, No. 17,
PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

AMELIA.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

In which the History looks backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther with our history, it may be proper to look back a little, in order to account for the late conduct of Dr. Harrison; which however inconsistent it may have hitherto appeared, when examined to the bottom, will be found, I apprehend, to be truly congruous with all the rules of the most perfect prudence, as well as with the most consummate goodness.

We have already partly seen in what light Booth had been represented to the doctor abroad. Indeed, the accounts which were sent of the captain, as well by the curate as by a gentleman of the neighbourhood, were much grosser, and more to his disadvantage, than the doctor was pleased to set them forth in his letter to the person accused. What sense he had of Booth's conduct, was, however, manifest by that letter. Nevertheless he resolved to suspend his final judgment till his return; and though he censured him, would not absolutely condemn him without ocular demonstration.

The doctor, on his return to his parish, found all the accusations which had been transmitted to him, confirmed by many witnesses; of which the curate's wife, who had been formerly a friend to Amelia, and still preserved the outward appearance of friendship, was the strongest. She introduced all with—'I am sorry to say 'it; and it is friendship which bids me speak; and it 'is for their good it should be told you:' after which beginnings, she never concluded a single speech without some horrid slander and bitter invective.

Beſides the malicious turn which was given to theſe affairs in the country, which were owing a good deal to misfortune, and ſome little perhaps to imprudence, the whole neighbourhood rung with ſeveral groſs and ſcandalous lyes, which were merely the inventions of his enemies, and of which the ſcene was laid in London ſince his abſence.

Poiſoned with all this malice, the doctor came to town, and learning where Booth lodged, went to make him a viſit. Indeed, it was the doctor, and no other, who had been at his lodgings that evening when Booth and Amelia were walking in the Park; and concerning which the reader may be pleaſed to remember ſo many ſtrange and odd conjectures.

Here the doctor ſaw the little gold watch, and all thoſe fine trinkets with which the noble lord had preſented the children; and which, from the anſwers given him by the poor ignorant innocent girl, he could have no doubt had been purchaſed within a few days by Amelia.

This account tallied ſo well with the ideas he had imbibed of Booth's extravagance in the country, that he firmly believed both the huſband and wife to be the vaineſt, ſillieſt, and moſt unjuſt people alive. It was, indeed, almoſt incredible, that two rational beings ſhould be guilty of ſuch abſurdity; but monſtrous and abſurd as it was, ocular demonſtration appeared to be the evidence againſt them.

The doctor departed from their lodgings enraged at this ſuppoſed diſcovery, and unhappily for Booth, was engaged to ſupper that very evening with the country gentleman of whom Booth had rented a farm. As the the poor captain happened to be the ſubject of converſation, and occaſioned their comparing notes, the account which the doctor gave of what he had ſeen that evening, ſo incenſed the gentleman to whom Booth was likewiſe a debtor, that he vowed he would take a writ out againſt him the next morning, and have his body alive or dead. And the doctor was at laſt perſuaded to

do

do the ſame. Mr. Murphy was thereupon immediately ſent for, and the doctor in his preſence repeated again what he had ſeen at his lodgings, as the foundation of his ſuing him, which the attorney, as we have before ſeen, had blabbed to Atkinſon.

But no ſooner did the doctor hear that Booth was arreſted, than the wretched condition of his wife and family began to affect his mind. The children, who were to be utterly undone with their father, were entirely innocent; and as for Amelia herſelf, though he thought he had moſt convincing proofs of very blameable levity; yet his former friendſhip and affection to her were buſy to invent every excuſe, till, by very heavily loading the huſband, they lightened the ſuſpicion againſt the wife.

In this temper of mind, he reſolved to pay Amelia a ſecond viſit, and was on his way to Mrs. Elliſon, when the ſerjeant met him, and made himſelf known to him. The doctor took his old ſervant into a coffee-houſe, where he received from him ſuch an account of Booth and his family, that he deſired the ſerjeant to ſhew him preſently to Amelia; and this was the cordial which we mentioned at the end of the ninth chapter of the preceding book.

The doctor became ſoon ſatisfied concerning the trinkets which had given him ſo much uneaſineſs, and which had brought ſo much miſchief on the head of poor Booth. Amelia likewiſe gave the doctor ſome ſatisfaction as to what he had heard of her huſband's behaviour in the country; and aſſured him, upon her honour, that Booth could ſo well anſwer every complaint againſt his conduct, that ſhe had no doubt but that a man of the doctor's juſtice and candour would entirely acquit him, and would conſider him as an innocent unfortunate man, who was the object of a good man's compaſſion, not of his anger or reſentment.

This worthy clergyman, who was not deſirous of finding proofs to condemn the captain, or to juſtify his own vindictive proceedings, but, on the contrary, rejoiced

joiced heartily in every piece of evidence which tended to clear up the character of his friend, gave a ready ear to all which Amelia said. To this, indeed, he was induced by the love he always had for that lady, by the good opinion he entertained of her, as well as by pity for her present condition, than which nothing appeared more miserable; for he found her in the highest agonies of grief and despair, with her two little children crying over their wretched mother. These are, indeed, to a well disposed mind, the most tragical sights that human nature can furnish, and afford a juster motive to grief and tears in the beholder, than it would be to see all the heroes who have ever infested the earth, hanged all together in a string.

The doctor felt this sight as he ought. He immediately endeavoured to comfort the afflicted; in which he so well succeeded, that he restored to Amelia sufficient spirits to give him the satisfaction we have mentioned; after which, he declared he would go and release her husband; which he accordingly did, in the manner we have above related.

CHAP. II.

In which the History goes forward.

WE now return to that period of our history, to which we had brought it at the end of our last book.

Booth and his friends arrived from the bailiff's, at the serjeant's lodgings; where Booth immediately ran up stairs to his Amelia; between whom I shall not attempt to describe the meeting. Nothing certainly was ever more tender or more joyful. This however I will observe, that a very few of these exquisite moments, of which the best minds only are capable, do, in reality, overbalance the longest enjoyments which can ever fall to the lot of the worst.

Whilst Booth and his wife were feasting their souls with the most delicious mutual endearments, the doctor was fallen to play with the two little children below stairs. While he was thus engaged, the little boy did

somewhat

ſomewhat amiſs; upon which the doctor ſaid, 'If you 'do ſo any more, I will take your papa away from you 'again.'---'Again, Sir,' ſaid the child; 'why was it 'you, then, that took away my papa before?'---'Suppoſe it was,' ſaid the doctor, 'would you not 'forgive me?'---'Yes,' cries the child, 'I would for-'give you, becauſe a chriſtian muſt forgive every body; 'but I ſhould hate you as long as I live.'

The doctor was ſo pleaſed with the boy's anſwer, that he caught him in his arms, and kiſſed him; at which time Booth and his wife returned. The doctor aſked which of them was their ſon's inſtructor in his religion: Booth anſwered, that he muſt confeſs Amelia had all the merit of that kind. 'I ſhould have rather 'thought he had learnt of his father,' cries the doctor, 'for he ſeems a good ſoldier-like chriſtian, and pro-'feſſes to hate his enemies with a very good grace.'

'How, Billy,' cries Amelia. 'I am ſure I did not 'teach you ſo.'

'I did not ſay I would hate my enemies, Madam,' cries the boy. 'I only ſaid I would hate papa's ene-'mies. Sure, mama, there is no harm in that: nay, 'I am ſure there is no harm in it; for I have heard 'you ſay the ſame thing a thouſand times.'

The doctor ſmiled on the child, and chucking him under the chin, told him, he muſt hate no body. And now Mrs. Atkinſon, who had provided a dinner for them all, deſired them to walk up, and partake of it.

And now it was that Booth was firſt made acquainted with the ſerjeant's marriage, as was Dr. Harriſon, both of whom greatly felicitated him upon it.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was, perhaps, a little more confounded than ſhe would have been had ſhe married a colonel, ſaid, 'If I have done wrong, Mrs. Booth is 'to anſwer for it; for ſhe made the match.---Indeed, 'Mr. Atkinſon, you are greatly obliged to the cha-'racter which this lady gives of you.'---'I hope he 'will deſerve it,' ſaid the doctor; 'and if the army

'hath

'hath not corrupted a good boy, I believe I may an-
'swer for him.'

While our little company were enjoying that happiness which never fails to attend conversation, where all present are pleased with each other, a visitant arrived, who was, perhaps, not very welcome to any of them. This was no other than Colonel James; who entering the room with much gaiety, went directly up to Booth, embraced him, and expressed great satisfaction at finding him there; he then made an apology for not attending him in the morning, which he said had been impossible; and that he had with the utmost difficulty put off some business of great consequence, in order to serve him this afternoon: 'but I am glad on your account,' cried he to Booth, 'that my presence was not necessary.'

Booth himself was extremely satisfied with the declaration, and failed not to return him as many thanks as he would have deserved had he performed his promise; but the two ladies were not quite so well satisfied. As for the serjeant, he had slipped out of the room when the colonel entered, not entirely out of that bashfulness which we have remarked him to be tainted with; but, indeed, from what had passed in the morning, he hated the sight of the colonel, as well on the account of his wife as on that of his friend.

The doctor, on the contrary, on what he had formerly heard from both Amelia and her husband of the colonel's generosity and friendship, had built so good an opinion of him, that he was very much pleased with seeing him, and took the first opportunity of telling him so. 'Colonel,' said the doctor, 'I have not the happiness of being known to you; but I have long been desirous of an acquaintance with a gentleman, in whose commendation I have heard so much from some present.' The colonel made a proper answer to this compliment, and they soon entered into a familiar conversation together: for the doctor was not difficult of access; indeed, he held the strange reserve, which is usually

usually practised in this nation between people who are in any degree strangers to each other, to be very unbecoming the Christian character.

The two ladies soon left the room; and the remainder of the visit, which was not very long, passed in discourse on various common subjects, not worth recording. In the conclusion, the colonel invited Booth and his lady, and the doctor, to dine with him the next day.

To give Colonel James his due commendation, he had shewn a great command of himself, and great presence of mind on this occasion; for, to speak the plain truth, the visit was intended to Amelia alone; nor did he expect, or perhaps desire, any thing less than to find the captain at home. The great joy which he suddenly conveyed into his countenance at the unexpected sight of his friend, is to be attributed to that noble art which is taught in those excellent schools called the several courts of Europe. By this men are enabled to dress out their countenances as much at their own pleasure, as they do their bodies; and to put on friendship with as much ease as they can a laced coat.

When the colonel and doctor were gone, Booth acquainted Amelia with the invitation he had received. She was so struck with the news, and betrayed such visible marks of confusion and uneasiness, that they could not have escaped Booth's observation, had suspicion given him the least hint to remark: but this, indeed, is the great optic glass helping us to discern plainly almost all that passes in the minds of others, without some use of which nothing is more purblind than human nature.

Amelia having recovered from her first perturbation, answered, 'My dear, I will dine wherever you please 'to lay your commands on me.'-- 'I am obliged to you, 'my dear soul,' cries Booth, 'your obedience shall be 'very easy; for my command will be, that you shall 'always follow your own inclinations.'---'My incli-'nations,' answered she, 'would, I am afraid, be too

'unreasonable

'unreasonable a confinement to you; for they would 'always lead me to be with you and your children, 'with at most a single friend or two, now and then.' ---'O my dear,' replied he, 'large companies give us 'a greater relish for our own society when we return to 'it; and we shall be extremely merry, for Dr. Harrison 'dines with us.'---'I hope you will, my dear,' cries she; 'but I own I should have been better pleased to 'have enjoyed a few days with yourself and the chil-'dren, with no other person but Mrs. Atkinson, for 'whom I have conceived a violent affection, and who 'would have given us but little interruption. How-'ever, if you have promised, I must undergo the pe-'nance.'---'Nay, child,' cried he, 'I am sure I would 'have refused, could I have guessed it had been in the 'least disagreeable to you; though I know your objec-'tion.'---'Objection,' cries Amelia eagerly, 'I have 'no objection!'---'Nay, nay,' said he, 'come be 'honest, I know your objection, though you are un-'willing to own it.'----'Good heavens!' cried Ame-lia, frightened, 'what do you mean? what objection?' ---'Why,' answered he, 'to the company of Mrs. 'James; and I must confess she hath not behaved to you 'lately as you might have expected; but you ought 'to pass all that by, for the sake of her husband, to 'whom we have both so many obligations; who is the 'worthiest, honestest, and most generous fellow in the 'universe, and the best friend to me that ever man 'had.'

Amelia, who had far other suspicions, and began to fear that her husband had discovered them, was highly pleased, when she saw him taking a wrong scent. She gave, therefore, a little into the deceit, and acknowledged the truth of what he had mentioned; but said, that the pleasures she should have in complying with his desires, would highly recompense any dissatisfaction which might arise on any other account; and shortly after ended the conversation on this subject, with her chearfully promising to fulfil his promise.

In

In reality, poor Amelia had now a moſt unpleaſant taſk to undertake; for ſhe thought it abſolutely neceſſary to conceal from her huſband the opinion ſhe had conceived of the colonel. For, as ſhe knew the character, as well of her huſband as of his friend, or rather enemy, (both being often ſynonymous in the language of the world) ſhe had the utmoſt reaſon to apprehend ſomething very fatal might attend her huſband's entertaining the ſame thoughts of James, which filled and tormented her own breaſt.

And, as ſhe knew that nothing but theſe thoughts could juſtify the leaſt unkind, or, indeed, the leaſt reſerved behaviour to James, who had, in all appearance, conferred the greateſt obligations upon Booth and herſelf, ſhe was reduced to a dilemma the moſt dreadful that can attend a virtuous woman, as it often gives the higheſt triumph, and ſometimes no little advantage, to the men of profeſſed gallantry.

In ſhort, to avoid giving any umbrage to her huſband, Amelia was forced to act in a manner which ſhe was conſcious muſt give encouragement to the colonel: a ſituation which, perhaps, requires as great prudence and delicacy, as any in which the heroic part of the female character can be exerted.

CHAP. III.

A Converſation between Dr. Harriſon and others.

THE next day, Booth and his lady, with the doctor, met at Colonel James's, where Colonel Bath likewiſe made one of the company.

Nothing very remarkable paſſed at dinner, or till the ladies withdrew. During this time, however, the behaviour of Colonel James was ſuch as gave ſome uneaſineſs to Amelia, who well underſtood his meaning, though the particulars were too refined and ſubtle to be obſerved by any other preſent.

When the ladies were gone, which was as ſoon as Amelia could prevail on Mrs. James to depart, Colonel Bath, who had been pretty briſk with Champagne at dinner, ſoon began to diſplay his magnanimity. 'My brother

'brother tells me, young gentleman,' ſaid he to Booth, 'that you have been uſed very ill lately by ſome raſcals; and I have no doubt but you will do yourſelf 'juſtice.'

Booth anſwered, that he did not know what he meant. 'Since I muſt mention it then,' cries the colonel, 'I hear you have been arreſted; and I think 'you know what ſatisfaction is to be required by a 'man of honour.'

'I beg, Sir,' ſays the doctor, 'no more may be 'mentioned of that matter. I am convinced no ſatisfaction will be required of the captain, till he is able 'to give it.'

'I do not underſtand what you mean by able,' cries the colonel. To which the doctor anſwered, that it was of too tender a nature to ſpeak more of.

'Give me your hand, doctor,' cries the colonel; 'I ſee you are a man of honour, though you wear a 'gown. It is, as you ſay, a matter of a tender nature. Nothing, indeed, is ſo tender as a man's honour. Curſe my liver, if any man; I mean, that is, 'if any gentleman, was to arreſt me, I would as ſurely 'cut his throat as----'

'How, Sir,' ſaid the doctor; 'would you compenſate one breach of the law by a much greater, and 'pay your debts by committing murder?'

'Why do you mention law between gentlemen?' ſays the colonel. 'A man of honour wears his law by 'his ſide. And can the reſentment of an affront make 'a gentleman guilty of murder? and what greater affront can one man caſt upon another, than by arreſting him? I am convinced, that he who would put up 'an arreſt, would put up a ſlap in the face.'

Here the colonel looked extremely fierce, and the divine ſtared with aſtoniſhment at this doctrine; when Booth, who well knew the impoſſibility of oppoſing the colonel's humour with ſucceſs, began to play with it; and having firſt conveyed a private wink to the doctor, he ſaid, there might be caſes undoubtedly where ſuch

an

an affront ought to be resented; but that there were others, where any resentment was impracticable. 'As, for instance,' said he, 'where the man is arrested 'by a woman.'

'I could not be supposed to mean that case,' cries the colonel; 'and you are convinced I did not mean it.'

'To put an end to this discourse at once, Sir,' said the doctor, 'I was the plaintiff at whose suit this gen-'tleman was arrested.'

'Was you so, Sir!' cries the colonel; 'then I have 'no more to say. Women and the clergy are upon 'the same footing. The long robed gentry are ex-'empted from the laws of honour.'

'I do not thank you for that exemption, Sir,' cries the doctor; 'and if honour and fighting are, as they 'seem to be, synonymous words with you, I believe 'there are some clergymen, who, in defence of their 'religion, or their country, or their friend, the only 'justifiable causes of fighting, except bare self-defence, 'would fight as bravely as yourself, colonel; and that 'without being paid for it.'

'Sir, you are privileged,' says the colonel with great dignity; 'and you have my leave to say what you 'please. I respect your order, and you cannot offend 'me.'

'I will not offend you, colonel,' cries the doctor; 'and our order is very much obliged to you, since you 'profess so much respect to us, and pay none to our 'Master.'

'What master, Sir!' said the colonel.

'That Master,' answered the doctor, 'who hath 'expressly forbidden all that cutting of throats to 'which you discover so much inclination.'

'O, your servant, Sir,' said the colonel, 'I see 'what you are driving at; but you shall not persuade 'me to think, that religion forces me to be a coward.'

'I detest and despise the name as much as you can,' cries the doctor; 'but you have a wrong idea of the 'word, colonel. What were all the Greeks and Ro-

'mans? were these cowards; and yet, did you ever 'hear of this butchery, which we call duelling, among 'them?'

'Yes, indeed, have I,' cries the colonel. 'What 'else is all Mr. Pope's Homer full of, but duels? Did 'not, what's his name, one of the Agamemnons, 'fight with that paultry rascal Paris? and Diomede 'with, what d'ye call him there; and Hector, with, 'I forget his name, he that was Achilles's bosom 'friend; and afterwards with Achilles himself? Nay, 'and in Dryden's Virgil, is there any thing almost be-'sides fighting?'

'You are a man of learning, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'but------'

'I thank you for that compliment,' said the colonel. 'No, Sir, I do not pretend to learning; but I have 'some little reading, and I am not ashamed to own it.'

'But are you sure, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'that 'you have not made a small mistake? for I am apt to 'believe, both Mr. Pope and Mr. Dryden (though I 'cannot say I ever read a word of either of them) speak 'of wars between nations, and not of private duels: 'for of the latter, I do not remember one single instance 'in all the Greek and Roman story. In short, it is a 'modern custom, introduced by barbarous nations 'since the times of christianity; though it is a direct 'and audacious defiance to the christian law, and is 'consequently much more sinful in us, than it would 'have been in the heathens.'

'Drink about, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'and let 'us call a new cause: for I perceive we shall never 'agree on this. You are a churchman, and I do not 'expect you to speak your mind.'

'We are both of the same church, I hope,' cries the doctor.

'I am of the church of England, Sir,' answered the colonel, 'and will fight for it to the last drop of my 'blood.'

'It is very generous in you, colonel,' cries the doctor,

tor, 'to fight so zealously for a religion by which you 'are to be damned.'

'It is well for you, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'that you wear a gown; for by all the dignity of a 'man, if any other person had said the words you have 'just uttered, I would have made him eat them! Aye, 'd---n me, and my sword into the bargain.'

Booth began to be apprehensive, that this dispute might grow too warm; in which case he feared that the colonel's honour, together with the Champagne, might hurry him so far, as to forget the respect due, and which he professed to pay, to the sacerdotal robe. Booth, therefore, interposed between the disputants, and said, that the colonel had very rightly proposed to call a new subject; for that it was impossible to reconcile accepting a challenge with the christian religion, or refusing it with the modern notion of honour. 'And 'you must allow it, doctor,' said he, 'to be a very 'hard injunction for a man to become infamous; and 'more especially for a soldier, who is to lose his bread 'into the bargain.'

'Aye, Sir,' says the colonel with an air of triumph, 'what say you to that?'

'Why, I say,' cries the doctor, 'that it is much 'harder to be damned on the other side.'

'That may be,' said the colonel; 'but d---n me, 'if I would take an affront of any man breathing for 'all that. And yet I believe myself to be as good a 'christian as wears a head. My maxim is, never to 'give an affront, nor ever to take one; and I say, that 'is the maxim of a good christian; and no man shall 'ever persuade me to the contrary.'

'Well, Sir,' said the doctor, 'since that is your 'resolution, I hope no man will ever give you an af-'front.'

'I am obliged to you for your hope, doctor,' cries the colonel with a sneer; 'and he that doth, will be 'obliged to you for lending him your gown: for, by

'the dignity of a man, nothing, out of petticoats, I 'believe, dares affront me.'

Colonel James had not hitherto joined in the discourse. In truth, his thoughts had been otherwise employed; nor is it very difficult for the reader to guess what had been the subject of them. Being waked, however, from his reverie, and having heard the two or three last speeches, he turned to his brother, and asked him, why he would introduce such a topic of conversation before a gentleman of Dr. Harrison's character.

Brother,' cried Bath, 'I own it was wrong, and I 'ask the doctor's pardon. I know not how it happened 'to arise; for you know, brother, I am not used to 'talk of these matters. They are generally poltroons 'that do. I think I need not be beholden to my 'tongue to declare I am none. I have shewn myself 'in a line of battle. I believe there is no man will 'deny that; I believe I may say no man dares deny 'that I have done my duty------'

The colonel was thus proceeding to prove that his prowess was neither the subject of his discourse, nor the object of his vanity, when a servant entered, and summoned the company to tea with the ladies; a summons which Colonel James instantly obeyed, and was followed by all the rest.

But as the tea-table conversation, though extremely delightful to those who are engaged in it, may probably appear somewhat dull to the reader, we will here put an end to the chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A Dialogue between Booth and Amelia.

THE next morning early, Booth went by appointment and waited on Colonel James; whence he returned to Amelia, in that kind of disposition which the great master of human passions would describe in Andromache, when he tells us she cried and smiled at the same instant.

Amelia plainly perceived the discomposure of his mind, in which the opposite affections of joy and grief were

were ſtruggling for the ſuperiority, and begged to know the occaſion; upon which Booth ſpoke as follows:

'My dear,' ſaid he, 'I had no intention to conceal 'from you what hath paſſ'd this morning between me 'and the colonel, who hath oppreſſed me, if I may 'uſe that expreſſion, with obligations. Sure never 'man had ſuch a friend; for never was there ſo noble, 'ſo generous a heart! I cannot help this ebullition of 'gratitude, I really cannot.' Here he pauſed a moment, and wiped his eyes, and then proceeded---'You 'know, my dear, how gloomy the proſpect was yeſ'terday before our eyes, how inevitably ruin ſtared 'me in the face; and the dreadful idea of having en'tailed beggary on my Amelia and her poſterity, racked 'my mind: for, though by the goodneſs of the doctor 'I had regained my liberty, the debt yet remained; 'and if that worthy man had a deſign of forgiving me 'his ſhare, this muſt have been my utmoſt hope; and 'the condition in which I muſt ſtill have found myſelf 'need not to be expatiated on. In what light then 'ſhall I ſee, in what words ſhall I relate, the colonel's 'kindneſs! O, my dear Amelia, he hath removed 'the whole gloom at once, hath driven all deſpair out 'of my mind, and hath filled it with the moſt ſanguine, 'and, at the ſame time, the moſt reaſonable hopes of 'making a comfortable proviſion for yourſelf and my 'dear children. In the firſt place, then, he will ad'vance me a ſum of money to pay off all my debts; 'and this on a bond to be repaid only when I ſhall be'come colonel of a regiment, and not before. In the 'next place, he is gone this very morning to aſk a 'company for me, which is now vacant in the Weſt-'Indies; and as he intends to puſh this with all his 'intereſt, neither he nor I have any doubt of his ſuc'ceſs. Now, my dear, comes the third; which, 'though perhaps it ought to give me the greateſt joy, 'ſuch is, I own, the weakneſs of my nature, that it rends 'my very heart-ſtrings aſunder. I cannot mention it;

'for I know it will give you equal pain; though I 'know on all proper occasions you can exert a manly 'resolution. You will not, I am convinced, oppose it, 'whatever you may suffer in complying. O, my dear 'Amelia, I must suffer likewise; yet I have resolved 'to bear it! You know not what my poor heart hath 'suffered since he made the proposal: it is love for you 'alone which could persuade me to submit to it. Con'sider our situation; consider that of our children; re'flect but on those poor babes, whose future happiness 'is at stake, and it must arm your resolution. It is 'your interest and theirs that reconciled me to a propo'sal, which when the colonel first made it, struck me 'with the utmost horror: he hath, indeed, from these 'motives, persuaded me into a resolution, which I 'thought impossible for any one to have persuaded me 'into. O, my dear Amelia, let me intreat you to 'give me up to the good of your children; as I have 'promised the colonel to give you up to their interest 'and your own. If you refuse these terms, we are 'still undone; for he insists absolutely upon them. 'Think then, my love, however hard they may be, 'necessity compels us to submit to them. I know in 'what light a woman, who loves like you, must con'sider such a proposal; and yet how many instances 'have you of women, who, from the same motives, 'have submitted to the same!'

'What can you mean, Mr. Booth?' cries Amelia, trembling.

'Need I explain my meaning to you more?' answered Booth. 'Did I not say, I must give up my 'Amelia?'

'Give me up!' said she.

'For a time only, I mean,' answered he; 'for a 'short time, perhaps. The colonel himself will take 'care it shall not be long; for I know his heart: I 'shall scarce have more joy in receiving you back, than 'he will have in restoring you to my arms. In the

'mean

'mean time, he will not only be a father to my chil-
'dren, but a husband to you.'

'A husband to me!' said Amelia.

'Yes, my dear; a kind, a fond, a tender, an af-
'fectionate husband. If I had not the most certain as-
'surances of this, doth my Amelia think I could be
'prevailed on to leave her? No, my Amelia, he is the
'only man on earth who could have prevailed on me;
'but I know, his house, his purse, his protection,
'will be all at your command. And as for any dislike
'you have conceived to his wife, let not that be any
'objection: for I am convinced he will not suffer her
'to insult you; besides, she is extremely well-bred,
'and how much soever she may hate you in her heart,
'she will at least treat you with civility.

'Nay, the invitation is not his, but her's; and I
'am convinced they will both behave to you with the
'greatest friendship: his, I am sure, will be sincere,
'as to the wife of a friend entrusted to his care; and
'her's will, from good breeding, have not only the
'appearances, but the effects, of the truest friendship.'

'I understand you, my dear, at last,' said she (in-
deed she had rambled into very strange conceits from
some parts of his discourse) 'and I will give you my
'resolution in a word; I will do the duty of a wife;
'and that is, to attend her husband wherever he goes.'

Booth attempted to reason with her but all to no
purpose. She gave, indeed, a quiet hearing to all he
said, and even to those parts which most displeased her
ears; I mean, those in which he exaggerated the great
goodness and disinterested generosity of his friend: but
her resolution remained inflexible, and resisted the force
of all his arguments with a steadiness of opposition
which it would have been almost excusable in him to
have construed into stubbornness.

The doctor arrived in the midst of the dispute; and,
having heard the merits of the cause on both sides, deli-
vered his opinion in the following words---

'I have always thought it, my dear children, a
'matter

'matter of the utmoſt nicety to interfere in any differ-'ences between huſband and wife; but, ſince you both 'deſire me, with ſuch earneſtneſs, to give you my ſen-'timents on the preſent conteſt between you, I will 'give you my thoughts as well as I am able. In the 'firſt place, then, can any thing be more reaſonable, 'than for a wife to deſire to attend her huſband? It is, 'as my favourite child obſerves, no more than a deſire 'to do her duty; and I make no doubt but that is one 'great reaſon of her inſiſting on it. And how can you 'yourſelf oppoſe it? Can love be it's own enemy? or 'can a huſband, who is fond of his wife, content him-'ſelf almoſt on any account with a long abſence from 'her?'

'You ſpeak like an angel, my dear Doctor Harri-'ſon,' anſwered Amelia: 'I am ſure, if he loved as 'tenderly as I do, he could on no account ſubmit 'to it.'

'Pardon me, child,' cried the doctor? 'there are 'ſome reaſons, which would not only juſtify his leaving 'you, but which muſt force him, if he hath any real 'love for you, joined with common ſenſe, to make 'that election. If it was neceſſary, for inſtance, either 'to your good, or the good of your children, he would 'not deſerve the name of a man, I am ſure not that of 'a huſband, if he heſitated a moment. Nay, in that 'caſe, I am convinced, you yourſelf would be an ad-'vocate for what you now oppoſe. I fancy, there-'fore, I miſtook him, when I apprehended he ſaid, 'that the colonel made his leaving you behind as the 'condition of getting him the commiſſion; for I know 'my dear child hath too much goodneſs, and too much 'ſenſe, and too much reſolution, to prefer any tempo-'rary indulgence of her own paſſions to the ſolid ad-'vantages of her whole family.'

'There, my dear!' cries Booth; 'I knew what 'opinion the doctor would be of. Nay, I am certain, 'there is not a wiſe man in the kingdom who would ſay 'otherwiſe.'

'Do

'Do not abuse me, young gentleman,' said the doctor, 'with appellations I do not deserve.'

'I abuse you, my dear doctor!' cries Booth.

'Yes, my dear Sir,' answered the doctor, 'you insinuated slily that I was wise; which, as the world understands the phrase, I should be ashamed of: and my comfort is, that no one can accuse me justly of it; I have just given an instance of the contrary, by throwing away my advice.'

'I hope, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that will not be the case.'

'Yes, Sir,' answered the doctor, 'I know it will be the case in the present instance; for either you will not go at all, or my little turtle here will go with you.'

'You are in the right, doctor,' cries Amelia.

'I am sorry for it,' said the doctor; 'for then, I assure you, you are in the wrong.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'if you knew all my reasons, you would say they were very strong ones.'

'Very probably,' cries the doctor. 'The knowledge that they are in the wrong, is a very strong reason to some women to continue so.'

'Nay, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'you shall never persuade me to that. I will not believe that any human being ever did an action merely because they knew it to be wrong.'

'I am obliged to you, my dear child,' said the doctor, 'for declaring your resolution of not being persuaded. Your husband would never call me a wise man again, if, after the declaration, I should attempt to persuade you.'

'Well, I must be content,' cries Amelia, 'to let you think as you please.'

'That is very gracious, indeed,' said the doctor. 'Surely, in a country where the church suffers others to think as they please, it would be very hard if they had not themselves the same liberty. And yet, as unreasonable as the power of controuling men's

'thoughts

'thoughts is represented, I will shew you how you 'shall controul mine, whenever you desire it.'

'How, pray,' cries Amelia. 'I should greatly 'esteem that power.'

'Why, whenever you act like a wise woman,' cries the doctor, 'you will force me to think you so; and, 'whenever you are pleased to act as you do now, I 'shall be obliged, whether I will or no, to think as I 'do now.'

'Nay, dear doctor,' cries Booth, 'I am convinced 'my Amelia will never do any thing to forfeit your 'good opinion. Consider but the cruel hardship of 'what she is to undergo, and you will make allowances 'for the difficulty she makes in complying. To say 'the truth, when I examine my own heart, I have 'more obligations to her than appear at first sight; for, 'by obliging me to find arguments to persuade her, 'she hath assisted me in conquering myself. Indeed, 'if she had shewn more resolution, I should have shewn 'less.'

'So you think it necessary, then,' said the doctor, 'that there should be one fool at least in every married 'couple. A mighty resolution truly! and well worth 'your valuing yourself upon, to part with your wife 'for a few months, in order to make the fortune of her 'and your children. When you are to leave her too in 'the care and protection of a friend that gives credit to 'the old stories of friendship, and doth an honour to 'human nature. What, in the name of goodness, do 'either of you think that you have made an union to 'endure for ever? How will either of you bear that 'separation which must some time or other, and per-'haps very soon, be the lot of one you? Have you 'forgot that you are both mortal? As for christi-'anity, I see you have resigned all pretensions to it: 'for I make no doubt, but that you have so set your 'hearts on the happiness you enjoy here together, that 'neither of you ever think a word of hereafter.'

Amelia now burst into tears: upon which Booth begged

begged the doctor to proceed no farther. Indeed, he would not have wanted the caution: for, however blunt he appeared in his discourse, he had a tenderness of heart which is rarely found among men; for which I know no other reason, than that true goodness is rarely found among them: for I am firmly persuaded, that the latter never possessed any human mind in any degree, without being attended by as large a portion of the former.

Thus ended the conversation on this subject: what followed is not worth relating, till the doctor carried off Booth with him to take a walk in the Park.

CHAP. V.

A Conversation between Amelia and Doctor Harrison, with the Result.

AMELIA being left alone, began to consider seriously of her condition; she saw it would be very difficult to resist the importunities of her husband, backed by the authority of the doctor; especially as she well knew how unreasonable her declaration must appear to every one who was ignorant of her real motives to persevere in it. On the other hand, she was fully determined, whatever might be the consequence, to adhere firmly to her resolution of not accepting the colonel's invitation.

When she had turned the matter every way in her mind, and vexed and tormented herself with much uneasy reflection upon it, a thought at last occurred to her, which immediately brought her some comfort. This was, to make a confident of the doctor, and to impart to him the whole truth. This method, indeed, appeared to her now to be so adviseable, that she wondered she had not hit upon it sooner; but it is the nature of despair to blind us all to the means of safety, however easy and apparent they may be.

Having fixed her purpose in her mind, she wrote a short note to the doctor, in which she acquainted him that she had something of great moment to impart to him, which must be an entire secret from her husband, and begged that she might have an opportunity of communicating it as soon as possible.

Doctor

Doctor Harrison received the letter that afternoon, and immediately complied with Amelia's request in visiting her. He found her drinking tea with her husband and Mrs. Atkinson, and sat down and joined the company.

Soon after the removal of the tea-table, Mrs. Atkinson left the room. The doctor then turning to Booth, said---'I hope, captain, you have a true sense of the 'obedience due to the church, though our clergy do 'not often exact it. However, it is proper to exercise 'our power sometimes, in order to remind the laity of 'their duty. I must tell you, therefore, that I have 'some private business with your wife; and I expect 'your immediate absence.'

'Upon my word, doctor,' answered Booth, 'no 'popish confessor, I firmly believe, ever pronounced 'his will and pleasure with more gravity and dignity; 'none therefore was ever more immediately obeyed 'than you shall be.' Booth then quitted the room, and desired the doctor to recal him when his business with the lady was over.

Doctor Harrison promised he would; and then turning to Amelia, he said---'Thus far, Madam, I have 'obeyed your commands, and am now ready to receive 'the important secret which you mention in your note.'

Amelia now informed her friend of all she knew, all she had seen and heard, and all that she suspected of the colonel. The good man seemed greatly shocked at the relation, and remained in a silent astonishment. Upon which Amelia said---'Is villainy so rare a thing, Sir, 'that it should so much surprize you?'---'No, child,' cried he; 'but I am shocked at seeing it so artfully 'disguised under the appearance of so much virtue. 'And to confess the truth, I believe my own vanity is 'a little hurt in having been so grossly imposed upon. 'Indeed, I had a very high regard for this man; for, 'besides the great character given him by your husband, and the many facts I have heard so much redounding to his honour, he hath the fairest and most

'promising

'promiſing appearance I have ever yet beheld. A 'good face, they ſay, is a letter of recommendation. 'O Nature, Nature, why art thou ſo diſhoneſt, as ever 'to ſend men with theſe falſe recommendations into the 'world!'

'Indeed, my dear Sir, I begin to grow entirely ſick 'of it,' cries Amelia: 'for ſure all mankind almoſt 'are villains in their hearts.'

'Fie, child,' cries the doctor. 'Do not make a 'concluſion ſo much to the diſhonour of the great Cre-'ator. The nature of man is far from being in itſelf 'evil: it abounds with benevolence, charity, and 'pity; coveting praiſe and honour, and ſhunning 'ſhame and diſgrace. Bad education, bad habits, 'and bad cuſtoms, debauch our nature, and drive it 'headlong, as it were, into vice. The governors of 'the world, and I am afraid the prieſthood, are an-'ſwerable for the badneſs of it. Inſtead of diſcou-'raging wickedneſs to the utmoſt of their power, both 'are apt to connive at it. In the great ſin of adultery, 'for inſtance; hath the government provided any law 'to puniſh it; or doth the prieſt take any care to cor-'rect it? On the contrary, is the moſt notorious 'practice of it any detriment to a man's fortune, or to 'his reputation in the world? doth it exclude from him 'any preferment in the ſtate, I had almoſt ſaid, in the 'church? Is it any blotch in his eſcutcheon, any 'bar to his honour? Is he not to be found every day 'in the aſſemblies of women of the higheſt quality, in 'the cloſets of the greateſt men, and even at the tables 'of biſhops? What wonder, then, if the community 'in general treat this monſtrous crime as matter of jeſt, 'and that men give way to the temptations of a violent 'appetite, when the indulgence of it is protected by 'law, and countenanced by cuſtom? I am convinced 'there are good ſtamina in the nature of this very man: 'for he hath done acts of friendſhip and generoſity to 'your huſband, before he could have any evil deſign on 'your chaſtity; and in a chriſtian ſociety, which I no

 'more

'more esteem this nation to be, than I do any part of 'Turky, I doubt not but this very colonel would have 'made a worthy and valuable member.'

'Indeed, my dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'you are the 'wisest as well as best man in the world------'

'Not a word of my wisdom,' cries the doctor. 'I 'have not a grain; I am not the least versed in the 'Chrematistic art*, as an old friend of mine calls it. 'I know not how to get a shilling: nor how to keep it 'in my pocket, if I had it.'

'But you understand human nature to the bottom,' answered Amelia; 'and your mind is the treasury of all 'ancient and modern learning.'

'You are a little flatterer,' cries the doctor; 'but I 'dislike you not for it. And to shew you I do not, I 'will return your flattery; and tell you, you have 'acted with great prudence in concealing this affair 'from your husband; but you have drawn me into a 'scrape: for I have promised to dine with this fellow 'again to-morrow; and you have made it impossible 'for me to keep my word.'

'Nay, but dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'for Heavens' 'sake take care. If you shew any kind of disrespect to 'the colonel, my husband may be led into some suspi-'cion, especially after our conference.'

'Fear nothing, child. I will give him no hint; 'and that I may be certain of not doing it, I will 'stay away. You do not think, I hope, that I will 'join in a chearful conversation with such a man; that 'I will so far betray my character, as to give any 'countenance to such flagitious proceedings. Besides, 'my promise was only conditional; and I do not 'know whether I could otherwise have kept it: for I 'expect an old friend every day, who comes to town 'twenty miles on foot to see me; whom I shall not

* The art of getting wealth is so called by Aristotle in his Politics.

'part

'part with on any account; for, as he is very poor, he 'may imagine I treat him with disrespect.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Amelia, 'I must admire you, 'and love you for your goodness.'

'Must you love me?' cries the doctor. 'I could 'cure you in a minute if I pleased.'

'Indeed, I defy you, Sir,' said Amelia.

'If I could but persuade you,' answered he, 'that 'I thought you not handsome, away would vanish all 'ideas of goodness in an instant. Confess honestly, 'would they not?'

'Perhaps I might blame the goodness of your eyes,' replied Amelia; 'and that is perhaps an honester con-'fession than you expected. But do, pray, Sir, be 'serious; and give me your advice what to do. Con-'sider the difficult game I have to play; for I am sure, 'after what I have told you, you would not even suffer 'me to remain under the roof of this colonel.'

'No, indeed, would I not,' said the doctor, 'while 'I have a house of my own to entertain you.'

'But how to dissuade my husband,' continued she, 'without giving him any suspicion of the real cause, 'the consequences of his guessing at which I tremble to 'think upon.'

'I will consult my pillow upon it,' said the doc-tor, 'and in the morning you shall see me again. In 'the mean time be comforted, and compose the per-'turbations of your mind.

'Well, Sir,' said she, 'I put my whole trust in 'you.'

'I am sorry to hear it,' cries the doctor; 'your 'innocence may give you a very confident trust in a 'much more powerful Assistance. However, I will 'do all I can to serve you; and now, if you please, we 'will call back your husband: for, upon my word, he 'hath shewn a good catholic patience. And where is 'the honest serjeant and his wife? I am pleased with 'the behaviour of you both to that worthy fellow, in 'opposition to the custom of the world; which, instead

'of being formed on the precepts of our religion to
'consider each other as brethren, teaches us to regard
'those who are a degree below us, either in rank or
'fortune, as a species of beings of an inferior order in
'the creation.'

The captain now returned into the room, as did the serjeant and Mrs. Atkinson; and the two couple, with the doctor, spent the evening together in great mirth and festivity: for the doctor was one of the best companions in the world; and a vein of chearfulness, good-humour, and pleasantry, ran through his conversation, with which it was impossible to resist being pleased.

CHAP. VI.

Containing as surprizing an Accident as is perhaps recorded in History.

BOOTH had acquainted the serjeant with the great goodness of Colonel James, and with the chearful prospects which he entertained from it. This Atkinson, behind the curtain, communicated to his wife. The conclusions which she drew from it, need scarce be hinted to the reader. She made, indeed, no scruple of plainly and bluntly telling her husband that the colonel had a most manifest intention to attack the chastity of Amelia.

This thought gave the poor serjeant great uneasiness; and after having kept him long awake, tormented him in his sleep with a most horrid dream, in which he imagined that he saw the colonel standing by the bed-side of Amelia, with a naked sword in his hand, and threatening to stab her instantly, unless she complied with his desires. Upon this, the serjeant started up in his bed, and catching his wife by the throat, cried out---'D---n
'you, put up your sword this instant, and leave the
'room, or by Heaven I'll drive mine to your heart's
'blood.'

This rough treatment immediately rouzed Mrs. Atkinson from her sleep; who no sooner perceived the position of her husband, and felt his hand grasping her throat,

throat, than she gave a violent shriek, and presently fell into a fit.

Atkinson now waked likewise, and soon became sensible of the violent agitations of his wife. He immediately leapt out of bed, and running for a bottle of water, began to sprinkle her very plentifully; but all to no purpose; she neither spoke, nor gave any symptoms of recovery. Atkinson then began to roar aloud, upon which Booth, who lay under him, jumped from his bed, and ran up with the lighted candle in his hand. The serjeant had no sooner taken the candle, than he ran with it to the bed-side. Here he beheld a sight which almost deprived him of his senses. The bed appeared to be all over blood, and his wife weltering in the midst of it. Upon this, the serjeant, almost in a frenzy, cried out---'O Heavens! I have killed my wife. I 'have stabbed her, I have stabbed her!'---'What can 'be the meaning of all this?' said Booth. 'O, Sir,' cries the serjeant, 'I dreamt I was rescuing your lady 'from the hands of Colonel James, and I have killed 'my poor wife.' Here he threw himself upon the bed by her, caught her in his arms, and behaved like one frantic with despair.

By this time, Amelia had thrown on a wrapping-gown, and was come up into the room, where the serjeant and his wife were lying on the bed, and Booth standing like a motionless statue by the bed-side. Amelia had some difficulty to conquer the effects of her own surprize on this occasion; for a more ghastly and horrible sight than the bed presented, could not be conceived.

Amelia sent Booth to call up the maid of the house, in order to lend her assistance; but, before his return, Mrs. Atkinson began to come to herself; and soon after, to the inexpressible joy of the serjeant, it was discovered she had no wound. Indeed, the delicate nose of Amelia soon made that discovery, which the grosser smell of the serjeant, and perhaps his fright, had prevented him from making: for now it appeared that the red liquor

with which the bed was stained, though it may, perhaps, sometimes run through the veins of a fine lady, was not what is properly called blood; but was, indeed, no other than cherry-brandy, a bottle of which Mrs. Atkinson always kept in her room to be ready for immediate use; and to which she used to apply for comfort in all her afflictions. This the poor serjeant, in his extreme hurry, had mistaken for a bottle of water. Matters were now soon accommodated; and no other mischief appeared to be done, unless to the bed-cloaths. Amelia and Booth returned back to their room; and Mrs. Atkinson rose from her bed, in order to equip it with a pair of clean sheets.

And thus this adventure would have ended without producing any kind of consequence, had not the words which the serjeant uttered in his frenzy made some slight impression on Booth; so much at least, as to awaken his curiosity: so that in the morning, when he arose, he sent for the serjeant, and desired to hear the particulars of this dream, since Amelia was concern'd in it.

The serjeant, at first, seem'd unwilling to comply, and endeavoured to make excuses. This, perhaps, increas'd Booth's curiosity, and he said---'Nay, I am 'resolved to hear it. Why, you simpleton, do you ima'gine me weak enough to be affected by a dream, 'however terrible it may be?'

'Nay, Sir,' cries the serjeant, 'as for that matter, 'dreams have sometimes fallen out to be true. One of 'my own, I know, did so concerning your honour; 'for when you courted my young lady, I dreamt you 'was married to her; and yet it was at a time when 'neither I myself, nor any of the country, thought you 'would ever obtain her. But Heaven forbid this 'dream should ever come to pass!'

'Why, what was this dream?' cries Booth. 'I 'insist on knowing.'

'To be sure, Sir,' cries the serjeant, 'I must not 'refuse you; but, I hope, you will never think any 'more of it. Why then, Sir, I dreamt that your ho-

'nour

'nour was gone to the West Indies, and had left my 'lady in the care of Colonel James; and last night I 'dreamt the colonel came to my lady's bed-side, offering 'to ravish her; and with a drawn sword in his hand, 'threatening to stab her that moment, unless she would 'comply with his desires. How I came to be by I 'know not; but I dreamt I rushed upon him, caught 'him by the throat, and swore I would put him to 'death, unless he instantly left the room. Here I 'waked, and this was my dream. I never paid any 'regard to a dream in my life; but, indeed, I never 'dreamt any thing so very plain as this. It appeared 'downright reality. I am sure, I have left the marks 'of my fingers in my wife's throat. I would not have 'taken an hundred pounds to have used her so.'

'Faith,' cries Booth, 'it was an odd dream; and 'not so easily to be accounted for, as that you had 'formerly of my marriage; for as Shakespeare says, '*Dreams denote a foregone conclusion.* Now it is im'possible you should ever have thought of any such 'matter as this.'

'However, Sir,' cries the serjeant, 'it is in your 'honour's power to prevent any possibility of this 'dream's coming to pass, by not leaving my lady to 'the care of the colonel. If you must go from her, 'certainly there are other places where she may be with 'great safety; and since my wife tells me my lady is so 'very unwilling, whatever reasons she may have, I 'hope your honour will oblige her.'

'Now I recollect it,' cries Booth, 'Mrs. Atkinson 'hath once or twice dropped some disrespectful words 'of the colonel. He hath done something to disoblige 'her.'

'He hath indeed, Sir,' replied the serjeant: 'he 'hath said that of her which she does not deserve, and 'for which, if he had not been my superior officer, I 'would have cut both his ears off. Nay, for that 'matter, he can speak ill of other people besides her.'

'Do you know, Atkinson,' cries Booth, very gravely,

gravely, 'that you are talking of the dearest friend 'I have?'

'To be honest, then,' answered the serjeant, 'I do 'not think so. If I did, I should love him much bet-'ter than I do.'

'I must and will have this explained,' cries Booth. 'I have too good an opinion of you, Atkinson, to 'think you would drop such things as you have, with-'out some reason: and I will know it.'

'I am sorry I have dropped a word,' cries Atkin-'son. I am sure I did not intend it: and your honour 'hath drawn it from me unawares.'

'Indeed, Atkinson,' cries Booth, 'you have made 'me very uneasy, and I must be satisfied.'

'Then, Sir,' said the serjeant, 'you shall give me 'your word of honour; or I will be cut into ten thou-'sand pieces before I will mention another syllable.'

'What shall I promise?' said Booth.

'That you will not resent any thing I shall lay to 'the colonel,' answered Atkinson.

'Resent! Well, I give you my honour,' said Booth.

The serjeant made him bind himself over and over again; and then related to him the scene which formerly passed between the colonel and himself, as far as concerned Booth himself; but concealed all that more immediately related to Amelia.

'Atkinson,' cries Booth, 'I cannot be angry with 'you; for I know you love me, and I have many obli-'gations to you; but you have done wrong in cen-'suring the colonel for what he said of me. I deserve 'all that he said; and his censures proceeded from his 'friendship.'

'But it was not so kind, Sir,' said Atkinson, 'to 'say such things to me, who am but a serjeant, and at 'such a time too.'

'I will hear no more,' cries Booth. 'Be assured 'you are the only man I would forgive on this occasion; 'and I forgive you only on condition you never speak

'a word

'a word more of this nature. This silly dream hath 'intoxicated you.'

'I have done, Sir,' cries the serjeant. 'I know 'my distance, and whom I am to obey: but I have 'one favour to beg of your honour, never to mention 'a word of what I have said to my lady; for I know 'she never would forgive me: I know she never would, 'by what my wife hath told me. Besides, you need 'not mention it, Sir, to my lady; for she knows it 'already, and a great deal more.'

Booth presently parted from the serjeant, having desired him to close his lips on this occasion; and repaired to his wife, to whom he related the serjeant's dream.

Amelia turned as white as snow, and fell into so violent a trembling, that Booth plainly perceived her emotion, and immediately partook of it himself. 'Sure, 'my dear,' said he, staring wildly, 'there is more in 'this than I know. A silly dream could not so discompose you. I beg you, I entreat you to tell me, 'hath ever Colonel James---'

At the very mention of the colonel's name, Amelia fell on her knees, and begged her husband not to frighten her.

'What do I say, my dear love,' cries Booth, 'that 'can frighten you?'

'Nothing, my dear,' said she. 'But my spirits 'are so discomposed with the dreadful scene I saw last 'night, that a dream, which at another time I should 'have laughed at, hath shocked me. Do but promise me 'that you will not leave me behind you, and I am easy.'

'You may say so,' cries Booth; 'for I will never 'deny you any thing. But make me easy too. I 'must know if you have seen any thing in Colonel 'James to displease you.'

'Why should you suspect it?' cries Amelia.

'You torment me to death,' cries Booth. 'By 'heavens! I will know the truth. Hath he ever said 'or done any thing which you dislike?'

'How, my dear,' said Amelia, 'can you imagine

' I should dislike a man who is so much your friend?
' Think of all the obligations you have to him, and
' then you may easily resolve yourself. Do you think,
' because I refuse to stay behind you in his house, that
' I have any objection to him? No, my dear, had he
' done a thousand times more than he hath, was he an
' angel instead of a man, I would not quit my Billy.
' There's the sore, my dear; there's the misery, to be
' left by you.'

Booth embraced her with the most passionate raptures, and looking on her with inexpressible tenderness, cried ---' Upon my soul, I am not worthy of you! I am a ' fool; and yet you cannot blame me. If the stupid ' miser hoards, with such care, his worthless treasure; ' if he watches it with such anxiety; if every apprehen- ' sion of another's sharing the least part, fills his soul ' with such agonies; O Amelia! what must be my ' condition, what terrors must I feel, while I am watch- ' ing over a jewel of such real, such inestimable worth?'

' I can, with great truth, return the compliment,' cries Amelia. ' I have my treasure, too; and I am so ' much a miser, that no force should ever tear me from it.'

' I am ashamed of my folly,' cries Booth; ' and yet ' it is all from extreme tenderness. Nay, you yourself ' are the occasion. Why will you ever attempt to keep ' a secret from me? Do you think I should have re- ' sented to my friend his just censure of my conduct?'

' What censure, my dear love?' cries Amelia.

' Nay the serjeant hath told me all,' cries Booth. ' Nay, and that he hath told it to you. Poor soul! ' thou couldst not endure to hear me accused, though ' never so justly, and by so good a friend. Indeed, ' my dear, I have discovered the cause of that resent- ' ment to the colonel, which you could not hide from ' me. I love you, I adore you for it. Indeed, ' I could not forgive a slighting word on you. But ' why do I compare things so unlike? what the colonel ' said of me was just and true; every reflection on my ' Amelia must be false and villainous.'

The

The discernment of Amelia was extremely quick; and she now perceived what had happened, and how much her husband knew of the truth. She resolved therefore to humour him, and fell severely on Colonel James for what he had said to the serjeant, which Booth endeavoured all he could to soften. And thus ended this affair, which had brought Booth to the very brink of a discovery, which must have given him the highest torment, if it had not produced any of those tragical effects which Amelia apprehended.

CHAP. VII.

In which the Author appears to be Master of that profound Learning, called Knowledge of the Town.

MRS. James now came to pay a morning's visit to Amelia. She entered the room with her usual gaiety, and after a slight preface, addressing herself to Booth, said she had been quarrelling with her husband on his account. 'I know not,' said she, 'what he 'means by thinking of sending you the Lord knows 'whither. I have insisted on his asking something for 'you nearer home. And it would be the hardest thing 'in the world, if he should not obtain it. Are we re-'solved never to encourage merit; but to throw away 'all our preferments on those who do not deserve them? 'What a set of contemptible wretches do we see strut-'ting about the town in scarlet!'

Booth made a very low bow, and modestly spoke in disparagement of himself. To which she answered---'Indeed, Mr. Booth, you have merit. I have heard 'it from my brother, who is a judge of those matters, 'and I am sure cannot be suspected of flattery. He is 'your friend as well as myself; and we will never let Mr. 'James rest till he hath got you a commission in England.

Booth bowed again, and was offering to speak, but she interrupted him, saying---'I will have no thanks, 'nor no fine speeches. If I can do you any service, 'I shall think I am only paying the debt of friendship 'to my dear Mrs. Booth.'

Amelia, who had long since forgot the dislike she had taken

taken to Mrs. James at her first seeing her in town, had attributed it to the right cause, and had begun to resume her former friendship for her, expressed very warm sentiments of gratitude on this occasion. She told Mrs. James, she should be eternally obliged to her if she could succeed in her kind endeavours; for that the thoughts of parting again with her husband had given her the utmost concern. 'Indeed,' added she, 'I cannot help 'saying, he hath some merit in the service; for he hath 'received two dreadful wounds in it, one of which 'very greatly endangered his life; and I am convinced, 'if his pretensions were backed with any interest, he 'would not fail of success.'

'They shall be backed with interest,' cries Mrs. James, 'if my husband hath any. He hath no favour 'to ask for himself, nor for any other friend that I 'know of; and, indeed, to grant a man his just due, 'ought hardly to be thought a favour. Resume your 'old gaiety, therefore, my dear Emily. Lord, I re'member the time when you was much the gayer crea'ture of the two. But you make an arrant mope of 'yourself, by confining yourself at home. One never 'meets you any where. Come, you shall go with me 'to the Lady Betty Castleton's.'

'Indeed, you must excuse me, my dear,' answered Amelia; 'I do not know Lady Betty.'

'Not know Lady Betty! how is that possible? But 'no matter, I will introduce you. She keeps a morn'ing rout; hardly a rout, indeed; a little bit of a 'drum, only four or five tables. Come, take your 'capuchine; you positively shall go.---Booth, you shall 'go with us too. Though you are with your wife, 'another woman will keep you in countenance.'

'La! child,' cries Amelia, 'how you rattle!'

'I am in spirits,' answered Mrs. James, 'this 'morning: for I won four rubbers together last night, 'and betted the things, and won almost every bet. I 'am in luck, and we will contrive to be partners. 'Come.' 'Nay,

'Nay, child, you shall not refuse Mrs. James,' said Booth.

'I have scarce seen my children to-day,' answered Amelia. 'Besides, I mortally detest cards.'

'Detest cards!' cries Mrs. James. 'How can you be so stupid! I would not live a day without them: nay, indeed, I do not believe I should be able to exist. Is there so delightful a sight in the whole world, as the four honours in one's own hand, unless it be three natural aces at brag! And you really hate cards!'

'Upon reflection,' cries Amelia, 'I have sometimes had great pleasure in them---in seeing my children build houses with them. My little boy is so dextrous, that he will sometimes build up the whole pack.'

'Indeed, Booth,' cries Mrs. James, 'this good woman of yours is strangely altered since I knew her first; but she will always be a good creature.'

'Upon my word, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you are altered too very greatly; but I doubt not to live to see you alter again, when you come to have as many children as I have.'

'Children!' cries Mrs. James; 'you make me shudder. How can you envy me the only circumstance which makes matrimony comfortable?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you injure me: for I envy no woman's happiness in marriage.' At these words such looks passed between Booth and his wife, as, to a sensible by-stander, would have made all the airs of Mrs. James appear in the highest degree contemptible, and would have rendered herself the object of compassion. Nor could that lady avoid looking a little silly on the occasion.

Amelia now, at the earnest desire of her husband, accoutred herself to attend her friend; but first she insisted on visiting her children, to whom she gave several hearty kisses, and then recommending them to the care of Mrs. Atkinson, she and her husband accompanied

Mrs. James to the rout; where few of my fine rea[ders] will be displeased to make part of the company.

The two ladies and Booth then entered an apartm[ent] beset with card-tables, like the rooms at Bath and T[un]bridge. Mrs. James immediately introduced her frie[nd] to Lady Betty; who received them very civilly, and p[re]sently engaged Booth and Mrs. James in a party [at] whist: for, as to Amelia, she so much declined pl[ay]ing, that, as the party could be filled without her, [she] was permitted to sit by.

And now, who should make his appearance but t[he] noble peer, of whom so much honourable mention ha[s] already been made in this history. He walked direct[ly] up to Amelia, and addressed her with as perfect a co[n]fidence as if he had not been in the least conscious [of] having in any manner displeased her; though the read[er] will hardly suppose, that Mrs. Ellison had kept an[y]thing a secret from him.

Amelia was not, however, so forgetful. She mad[e] him a very distant curtsey; would scarce vouchsafe [an] answer to any thing he said; and took the first oppo[r]tunity of shifting her chair, and retiring from him.

Her behaviour, indeed, was such, that the peer plain[ly] perceived that he should get no advantage by pursui[ng] her any farther at present. Instead, therefore, of a[t]tempting to follow her, he turned on his heel, and ad[]dressed his discourse to another lady; though he cou[ld] not avoid often casting his eyes towards Amelia [as] long as she remained in the room.

Fortune, which seems to have been generally no grea[t] friend to Mr. Booth, gave him no extraordinary mark of her favour at play. He lost two full rubbers, whi[ch] cost him five guineas; after which, Amelia, who w[as] uneasy at his lordship's presence, begged him, in [a] whisper, to return home; with which request he d[i]rectly complied.

Nothing, I think, remarkable happened to Booth unless the renewal of his acquaintance with an office[r] whom

whom he had known abroad, and who made one of his party at the whist-table.

The name of this gentleman, with whom the reader will hereafter be better acquainted, was Trent. He had formerly been in the same regiment with Booth, and there was some intimacy between them. Captain Trent expressed great delight in meeting his brother officer, and both mutually promised to visit each other.

The scenes which had passed the preceding night and that morning, had so confused Amelia's thoughts, that, in the hurry in which she was carried off by Mrs. James, she had entirely forgot her appointment with Dr. Harrison. When she was informed, at her return home, that the doctor had been to wait upon her, and had expressed some anger at her being gone out, she became greatly uneasy, and begged of her husband to go to the doctor's lodgings, and make her apology.

But lest the reader should be as angry with the doctor, as he had declared himself with Amelia, we think proper to explain the matter. Nothing then was farther from the doctor's mind than the conception of any anger towards Amelia. On the contrary, when the girl answered him, that her mistress was not at home, the doctor said with great good humour---'How! not at 'home! then tell your mistress she is a giddy vagabond, 'and I will come to see her no more till she sends for me.' This the poor girl, from misunderstanding one word, and half forgetting the rest, had construed into great passion, and several bad words, and a declaration that he would never see Amelia any more.

CHAP. VIII.

In which two Strangers make their Appearance.

BOOTH went to the doctor's lodgings, and found him engaged with his country friend and his son, a young gentleman who was lately in orders; both of whom the doctor had left, to keep his appointment with Amelia.

After what we mentioned at the end of the last chapter, we need take little notice of the apology made by

Booth, or the doctor's reception of it, which was in his peculiar manner. 'Your wife,' said he, 'is a vain 'hussey, to think herself worth my anger; but tell her 'I have the vanity myself to think I cannot be angry 'without a better cause. And yet tell her, I intend 'to punish her for her levity: for, if you go abroad, I 'have determined to take her down with me into the 'country, and make her do penance there till your re'turn.'

'Dear Sir,' said Booth, 'I know not how to thank 'you, if you are in earnest.'

'I assure you then I am in earnest,' cries the doctor; 'but you need not thank me, however, since you 'know not how.'

'But would not that, Sir,' said Booth, 'be shew'ing a slight to the colonel's invitation? and you know 'I have so many obligations to him.'

'Do not tell me of the colonel,' cries the doctor; 'the church is to be first served. Besides, Sir, I have 'priority of right, even to yourself. You stole my 'little lamb from me; for I was her first love.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Booth, 'if I should be so unhappy 'to leave her to any one, she must herself determine; 'and, I believe, it will not be difficult to guess where 'her choice will fall: for of all men, next to her hus'band, I believe none can contend with Dr. Harrison 'in her favour.'

'Since you say so,' cries the doctor, 'fetch her hither 'to dinner with us: for I am at least so good a chris'tian to love those that love me.---I will shew you my 'daughter, my old friend; for I am really proud of 'her---and you may bring my grand-children with 'you, if you please.'

Booth made some compliments; and then went on his errand. As soon as he was gone, the old gentleman said to the doctor---'Pray, my good friend, what 'daughter is this of yours? I never so much as heard 'that you was married.'

'And what then,' cries the doctor; 'did you ever 'hear

'hear that a pope was married; and yet ſome of them 'have had ſons and daughters, I believe: but, however, 'this young gentleman will abſolve me without oblig- 'ing me to penance.'

'I have not yet that power,' anſwered the young 'clergyman; for I am only in deacon's orders.'

'Are you not?' cries the doctor; why, then, I will 'abſolve myſelf. You are to know then, my good 'friend, that this young lady was the daughter of a 'neighbour of mine, who is ſince dead, and whoſe ſins 'I hope are forgiven: for ſhe had too much to anſwer 'for on her child's account. Her father was my inti- 'mate acquaintance and friend; a worthier man, in- 'deed, I believe, never lived. He died ſuddenly when 'his children were infants; and, perhaps, to the ſud- 'denneſs of his death it was owing, that he did not 'recommend any care of them to me. However, I, 'in ſome meaſure, took that charge upon me; and 'particularly of her whom I call my daughter. In- 'deed, as ſhe grew up, ſhe diſcovered ſo many good 'qualities, that ſhe wanted not the remembrance of 'her father's merit to recommend her. I do her no 'more than juſtice, when I ſay, ſhe is one of the beſt 'creatures I ever knew. She hath a ſweetneſs of tem- 'per, a generoſity of ſpirit, an openneſs of heart; in a 'word, ſhe hath a true chriſtian diſpoſition. I may 'call her an Iſraelite, indeed, in whom there is no 'guile.'

'I wiſh you joy of your daughter,' cries the old gentleman: 'for to a man of your diſpoſition, to find 'out an adequate object of your benevolence, is, I ac- 'knowledge, to find a treaſure.'

'It is, indeed, a happineſs,' cries the doctor.

'The greateſt difficulty,' added the gentleman, 'which perſons of your turn of mind meet with, is in 'finding proper objects of their goodneſs: for nothing 'ſure can be more irkſome to a generous mind than to 'diſcover that it hath thrown away all it's good offices 'on a ſoil that bears no other fruit than ingratitude.'

'I remember,' cries the doctor, 'Phocylides saith---

'Μὴ κακὸν εὖ ἔρξῃς· σπείρειν ἴσον ἐσ' ἐνὶ πόντῳ *.

'But he speaks more like a philosopher than a christian. 'I am more pleased with a French writer, one of the 'best, indeed, that I ever read; who blames men for 'lamenting the ill return which is so often made to 'the best offices †. "A true christian can never be "disappointed, if he doth not receive his reward in "this world: the labourer might as well complain "that he is not paid his hire in the middle of the "day."'

'I own indeed,' said the gentleman, 'if we see it 'in that light-------------'

'And in what light should we see it?' answered the doctor. 'Are we like Agrippa, only *almost* christians? or, is christianity a matter of bare theory, and 'not a rule for our practice?'

'Practical undoubtedly, undoubtedly practical,' cries the gentleman. 'Your example might, indeed, have convinced me long ago, that we ought to 'do good to every one.'

'Pardon me, father,' cries the young divine, 'that 'is rather a heathenish than a christian doctrine. Homer, I remember, introduces in his Iliad, one Axylus, 'of whom he says---

‡ 'Φίλος δ' ἦν ἀνθρώποισι;
'Πάντας γὰρ φιλέεσκεν.

'But Plato, who of all the heathens came nearest 'to the Christian philosophy, condemned this as impious doctrine; so Eustathius tells us, folio 474.'

'I know he doth,' cries the doctor; 'and so Barnes 'tells us, in his note upon the place: but if you remember

* To do a kindness to a bad man, is like sowing your seed in the sea.

† D'Esprit.

‡ He was a friend to mankind, for he loved them all.

'member

'member the rest of the quotation, as well as you do 'that from Eustathius, you might have added the ob-'servation which Mr. Dryden makes in favour of this 'passage, that he found not in all the Latin authors so 'admirable an instance of extensive humanity. You 'might have likewise remembered the noble sentiment 'with which Mr. Barnes ends his note, the sense of 'which is taken from the fifth chapter of Matthew---

' ——— ὃς καὶ φάος ἠελίοιο
'Μιγδ' ἀγαθοῖσι κακοῖσί τ' ἐπ' ἀνδράσιν ἐξανατέλλει.

'It seems, therefore, as if this character rather became 'a christian than a heathen; for Homer could not have 'transcribed it from any of his deities. Whom is it, 'therefore, we imitate by such extensive benevolence?'

'What a prodigious memory you have!' cries the old gentleman.---'Indeed, son, you must not contend 'with the doctor in these matters.'

'I shall not give my opinion hastily,' cries the son. 'I know again what Mr. Poole, in his annotations, 'says on that verse of St. Matthew: That it is only 'to *heap up coals of fire upon their heads*. How are we 'to understand, pray, the text immediately preced-'ing? *Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do 'good to them that hate you.*'

'You know, I suppose, young gentleman,' said the doctor, 'how these words are generally understood. 'The commentator, you mention, I think, tells us, 'that love is not here to be taken in the strict sense, so 'as to signify the complacency of the heart; you may 'hate your enemies as God's enemies, and seek due 'revenge of them for his honour: and for your own 'sake too you may seek moderate satisfaction of them; 'but then, you are to love them with a love consistent 'with these things; that is to say, in plainer words, 'you are to love them, and hate them, and bless and 'curse, and do them good and mischief.'

'Excellent! admirable!' said the old gentleman. 'You have a most inimitable turn to ridicule.'

'I do

'I do not approve ridicule,' said the son, 'on such 'subjects.'

'Nor I neither,' cries the doctor. 'I will give you 'my opinion, therefore, very seriously. The two 'verses taken together contain a very positive precept, 'delivered in the plainest words, and yet illustrated by 'the clearest instance, in the conduct of the Supreme 'Being; and lastly, the practice of this precept is most 'nobly enforced by the reward annexed---*that ye may 'be the children*, and so forth. No man, who under- 'stands what it is to love, and to bless, and to do 'good, can mistake the meaning. But if they re- 'quired any comment, the Scripture itself affords 'enough. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, 'give him drink; not rendering evil for evil, or railing 'for railing, but contrarywise, blessing.* They do not, 'indeed, want the comments of men who, when they 'cannot bend their minds to the obedience of Scripture, 'are desirous to wrest Scripture to a compliance with 'their own inclinations.'

'Most nobly and justly observed,' cries the old gen- tleman. 'Indeed, my good friend, you have explained 'the text with the utmost perspecuity.'

'But if this be the meaning,' cries the son, 'there 'must be an end of all law and justice; for I do not 'see how any man can prosecute his enemy in a court 'of justice.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, as an 'enemy merely, and from a spirit of revenge, he can- 'not, and he ought not to prosecute him; but as an 'offender against the laws of his country, he may, and 'it is his duty so to do: is there any spirit of revenge 'in magistrates or officers of justice, when they punish 'criminals? Why do such, ordinarily I mean, con- 'cern themselves in inflicting punishments, but be- 'cause it is their duty? and why may not a private 'man deliver an offender into the hands of justice, 'from the same laudable motive? Revenge, indeed, 'of all kinds, is strictly prohibited; wherefore, as we

'are

'are not to execute it with our own hands, so neither 'are we to make use of the law as the instrument of 'private malice, and to worry each other with inve- 'teracy and rancour. And where is the great diffi- 'culty in obeying this wise, this generous, this noble 'precept? If revenge be, as a certain divine, not 'greatly to his honour, calls it, the most luscious mor- 'sel the devil ever dropt into the mouth of a sinner, it 'must be allowed at least to cost us often extremely dear. 'It is a dainty, if it indeed it be one, which we come 'at with great inquietude, with great difficulty, and 'with great danger. However pleasant it may be to 'the palate, while we are feeding on it, it is sure to 'leave a bitter relish behind it; and so far, indeed, it 'may be called a luscious morsel, that the most greedy 'appetites are soon glutted, and the most eager long- 'ing for it is soon turned into loathing and repentance. 'I allow there is something tempting in it's outward 'appearance; but it is like the beautiful colour of 'some poisons, from which, however they may attract 'our eyes, a regard to our own welfare commands us 'to abstain. And this is an abstinence to which wis- 'dom alone, without any Divine command, hath been 'often found adequate; with instances of which the 'Greek and Latin authors every where abound. May 'not a christian, therefore, be well ashamed of making 'a stumbling block of a precept, which is not only 'consistent with his worldly interest, but to which so 'noble an incentive is proposed?'

The old gentleman fell into raptures at this speech; and, after making many compliments to the doctor upon it, he turned to his son, and told him, he had an opportunity now of learning more in one day, than he had learned at the university in a twelvemonth.

The son replied, that he allowed the doctrine to be extremely good in general, and that he agreed with the greater part; 'But I must make a distinction,' said he ------However, he was interrupted from his distinction

at present; for now Booth returned with Amelia and the children.

CHAP. IX.

A Scene of modern Wit and Humour.

IN the afternoon, the old gentleman proposed a walk to Vauxhall; a place of which, he said, he had heard much, but had never seen it.

The doctor readily agreed to his friend's proposal, and soon after ordered two coaches to be sent for to carry the whole company. But when the servant was gone for them, Booth acquainted the doctor, that it was yet too early. 'Is it so,' said the doctor: 'why 'then I'll carry you first to one of the greatest and 'highest entertainments in the world.'

The children pricked up their ears at this; nor did any of the company guess what he meant; and Amelia asked what entertainment he could carry them to at that time of the day.

'Suppose,' said the doctor, 'I should carry you to 'court?'

'At five o'clock in the afternoon!' cries Booth.

'Aye, suppose I should have interest enough to in'troduce you into the presence?'

'You are jesting, dear Sir,' cries Amelia.

'Indeed, I am serious,' answered the doctor. 'I 'will introduce you into that Presence, compared to 'whom the greatest emperor on the earth is many mil'lions of degrees meaner than the most contemptible 'reptile is to him. What entertainment can there be 'to a rational being equal to this? Was not the taste 'of mankind most wretchedly depraved, where would 'the vain man find an honour, or where would the 'lover of pleasure propose so adequate an object as Di'vine worship? With what extasy must the contem'plation of being admitted to such a Presence fill the 'mind! The pitiful courts of princes are open to 'few, and to those only at particular seasons; but from 'this glorious and gracious Presence, we are none of 'us, and at no time, excluded.'

The

The doctor was proceeding thus, when the servant returned, saying, the coaches were ready: and the whole company, with the greatest alacrity, attended the doctor to St. James's church.

When the service was ended, and they were again got into their coaches, Amelia returned the doctor many thanks for the light in which he had placed Divine worship; assuring him, that she had never before had so much transport in her devotion as at this time; and saying, she believed she should be the better for this notion he had given her, as long as she lived.

The coaches being come to the water-side, they all alighted, and getting into one boat, proceeded to Vauxhall.

The extreme beauty and elegance of this place is well known to almost every one of my readers: and happy is it for me that it is so; since, to give an adequate idea of it, would exceed my power of description. To delineate the particular beauties of these gardens would, indeed, require as much pains, and as much paper too, as to rehearse all the good actions of their master; whose life proves the truth of an observation, which I have read in some ethic writer, that a truly elegant taste is generally accompanied with an excellency of heart; or, in other words, that true virtue is, indeed, nothing else but true taste.

Here our company diverted themselves with walking an hour or two before the music began. Of all the seven, Booth alone had ever been here before; so that, to all the rest, the place, with it's other charms, had that of novelty. When the music played, Amelia, who stood next to the doctor, said to him in a whisper —'I hope I am not guilty of profaneness; but, in 'pursuance of that chearful chain of thoughts with 'which you have inspired me this afternoon, I was just 'now lost in a reverie, and fancied myself in those 'blissful mansions which we hope to enjoy hereafter. 'The delicious sweetness of the place, the enchanting 'charms of the music, and the satisfaction which ap-
'pears

'pears in every one's countenance, carried my soul almost to heaven in it's ideas. I could not have, indeed, imagined there had been any thing like this in the world.'

The doctor smiled, and said---'You see, dear Madam, there may be pleasures, of which you could conceive no idea, till you actually enjoyed them.'

And now the little boy, who had long withstood the attractions of several cheese-cakes that passed to and fro, could contain no longer; but asked his mother to give him one, saying---'I am sure my sister would be glad of another, though she is ashamed to ask.' The doctor, overhearing the child, proposed that they should all retire to some place where they might sit down and refresh themselves, which they accordingly did. Amelia now missed her husband; but as she had three men in her company, and one of them was the doctor, she concluded herself and her children to be safe, and doubted not but that Booth would soon find her out.

They now sat down, and the doctor very gallantly desired Amelia to call for what she liked. Upon which the children were supplied with cakes; and some ham and chicken were provided for the rest of the company. With which, while they were regaling themselves with the highest satisfaction, two young fellows walking arm in arm came up, and when they came opposite to Amelia, stood still, staring Amelia full in the face, and one of them cried aloud to the other---'D---n me, my lord, if she is not an angel!' My lord stood still, staring likewise at her, without speaking a word: when two others of the same gang came up, and one of them cried---'Come along, Jack, I have seen her before; but she is too well manned already. Three are enough for one woman, or the devil is in it!'

'D---n me,' says he that spoke first, and whom they called Jack, 'I will have a brush at her, if she belonged to the whole convocation.' And so saying, he went up to the young clergyman, and cried---'Doctor, sit up a little, if you please, and do not take up more

room

'room in a bed than belongs to you.' At which words he gave the young man a push, and seated himself down directly over-against Amelia; and leaning both his elbows on the table, fixed his eyes on her in a manner with which modesty can neither look, nor bear to be looked at.

Amelia seemed greatly shocked at this treatment; upon which the doctor removed her within him, and then facing the gentleman, asked him what he meant by this rude behaviour. Upon which my lord stepped up, and said---'Do not be impertinent, old 'gentleman. Do you think such fellows as you are to 'keep, d---n me! such fine wenches, d---n me! to 'yourselves, d---n me?'

'No, no,' cries Jack, 'the old gentleman is more 'reasonable. Here is the fellow that eats up the tithe-'pig. Do not you see how his mouth waters at her? 'Where is your slabbering bib?' For though the gentleman had rightly guessed he was a clergyman, yet he had not any of those insignia on with which it would have been improper to have appeared there.

'Such boys as you,' cries the young clergyman, 'ought to be well whipped at school, instead of being 'suffered to become nuisances in the society.'

'Boys, Sir?' says Jack; 'I believe I am as good a 'man as yourself, Mr. -----, and as good a scholar 'too. *Bos fur sus quotque sacerdos.* Tell me what is 'next. D---n me, I'll hold you fifty pounds you do 'not tell me what is next.'

'You have him, Jack, cries my lord. 'It is all 'over with him, d---n me. He cannot strike another 'blow.'

'If I had you in a proper place,' cries the clergyman, 'you should find I would strike a blow, and a 'pretty hard one too.'

'There,' cries my lord, 'there is the meekness of 'the clergyman. There spoke the wolf in sheep's 'cloathing. D---n me, how big he looks! You must

'be civil to him, faith! or elſe he will burſt with
'pride.'

'Aye, aye,' cries Jack, 'let the clergy alone for
'pride; there's not a lord in the kingdom, now, hath
'half the pride of that fellow.'

'Pray, Sir,' cries the doctor, turning to the other,
'are you a lord?'

'Yes, Mr.------, cries he, 'I have that honour,
'indeed.'

'And I ſuppoſe you have pride too,' ſaid the
doctor.

'I hope I have, Sir,' anſwered he, 'at your ſervice.'

'If ſuch a one as you, Sir,' cries the doctor, 'who
'are not only a ſcandal to the title you bear as a lord,
'but even as a man, can pretend to pride, why will
'you not allow it to a clergyman? I ſuppoſe, Sir, by
'your dreſs, you are in the army; and, by the rib-
'band in your hat, you ſeem to be proud of that too.
'How much greater and more honourable is the ſervice
'in which that gentleman is enliſted than yours! Why,
'then, ſhould you object to the pride of the clergy,
'ſince the loweſt of the function is, in reality, every
'way ſo much your ſuperior?'

'Tida, tidu, tidum!' cries my lord.

'However, gentlemen,' cries the doctor, 'if you
'have the leaſt pretenſion to that name, I beg you will
'put an end to your frolic; ſince you ſee it gives ſo
'much uneaſineſs to the lady. Nay, I entreat you
'for your own ſakes; for here is one coming, who will
'talk to you in a very different ſtyle from ours.'

'One coming!' cries my lord; 'what care I who
'is coming?'

'I ſuppoſe it is the devil,' cries Jack; 'for here are
'two of his livery ſervants already.'

'Let the devil come as ſoon as he will,' cries my
lord; 'd---n me if I have not a kiſs.'

Amelia now fell a trembling; and her children,
perceiving her fright, both hung on her, and began to
cry; when Booth and Captain Trent both came up.

Booth,

Booth, feeing his wife diſordered, aſked eagerly what was the matter. At the ſame time, the lord and his companion ſeeing Captain Trent, whom they well knew, ſaid both together---'What! does this company 'belong to you?' When the doctor, with great preſence of mind, as he was apprehenſive of ſome fatal conſequence if Booth ſhould know what had paſt, ſaid ---'So, Mr. Booth, I am glad you are returned; your 'poor lady here began to be frighted out of her wits. '---But now you have him again,' ſaid he to Amelia, 'I hope you will be eaſy.'

Amelia, frighted as ſhe was, preſently took the hint, and greatly chid her huſband for leaving her. But the little boy was not ſo quick-ſighted, and cried---'Indeed, papa, thoſe naughty men there have frighted 'my mamma out of her wits.'

'How!' cries Booth, a little moved. 'Frightened! 'hath any one frightened you, my dear?'

'No, my love,' anſwered ſhe, 'nothing. I know 'not what the child means. Every thing is well, now 'I ſee you ſafe.'

Trent had been all the while talking aſide with the young ſparks; and now addreſſing himſelf to Booth, ſaid---'Here hath been ſome little miſtake; I believe 'my lord miſtook Mrs. Booth for ſome other lady.'

'It is impoſſible,' cries my lord, 'to know every 'one. I am ſure, if I had known the lady to be a 'woman of faſhion, and an acquaintance of Captain 'Trent, I ſhould have ſaid nothing diſagreeable to 'her; but, if I have, I aſk her pardon, and the company's.'

'I am in the dark,' cries Booth. 'Pray what is all 'this matter?'

'Nothing of any conſequence,' cries the doctor, 'not worth your enquiring into. You hear it was a 'miſtake of the perſon; and I really believe his lordſhip, that all proceeded from his not knowing to 'whom the lady belonged.'

'Come, come,' ſays Trent, 'there is nothing in

'the matter, I assure you. I will tell you the whole 'another time.'

'Very well; since you say so,' cries Booth, 'I am 'contented.' So ended the affair, and the two sparks 'made their congee, and sneaked off.

'Now they are gone,' said the young gentleman, 'I 'must say, I never saw two worse bred jackanapes, 'nor fellows that deserved to be kicked more. If I had 'had them in another place, I would have taught them 'a little more respect to the church.'

'You took rather a better way,' answered the doctor, 'to teach them that respect.'

Booth now desired his friend Trent to sit down with them, and proposed to call for a fresh bottle of wine; but Amelia's spirits were too much disconcerted to give her any prospect of pleasure that evening. She therefore laid hold of the pretence of her children, for whom she said the hour was already too late; with which the doctor agreed. So they paid their reckoning, and departed; leaving to the two rakes the triumph of having totally dissipated the mirth of this little innocent company, who were before enjoying compleat satisfaction.

CHAP. X.

A curious Conversation between the Doctor, young Clergyman, and the young Clergyman's Father.

THE next morning, when the doctor and his two friends were at breakfast, the young clergyman, in whose mind the injurious treatment he had received the evening before was very deeply impressed, renewed the conversation on that subject. 'It is a scandal,' said he, 'to the government, that they do not preserve more respect to the clergy, by punishing all rudeness to them 'with the utmost severity. It was very justly observed 'of you, Sir,' says he to the doctor, 'that the lowest 'clergyman in England is in real dignity superior to 'the highest nobleman. What then can be so shocking, as to see that gown, which ought to entitle us to 'the veneration of all we meet, treated with contempt 'and ridicule? Are we not, in fact, ambassadors from

'Heaven

'Heaven to the world; and do they not, therefore, in 'denying us our due respect, deny it in reality to him 'that sent us?'

'If that be the case,' says the doctor, 'it behoves 'them to look to themselves; for he who sent us, is 'able to exact most severe vengeance for the ill treat-'ment of his ministers.'

'Very true, Sir,' cries the young one; 'and I heartily 'hope he will: but those punishments are at too great 'a distance to infuse terror into wicked minds. The 'government ought to interfere with it's immediate 'censures. Fines and imprisonments, and corporal 'punishments, operate more forcibly on the human 'mind, than all the fears of damnation.'

'Do you think so?' cries the doctor; 'then I am 'afraid men are very little in earnest in those fears.'

'Most justly observed,' says the old gentleman. 'Indeed I am afraid that is too much the case.'

'In that,' said the son, 'the government is to blame. 'Are not books of infidelity, treating our holy religion 'as a mere imposture, nay, sometimes, as a mere jest, 'published daily, and spread abroad amongst the peo-'ple with perfect impunity?'

'You are certainly in the right,' says the doctor, 'there is a most blameable remissness with regard to 'these matters: but the whole blame doth not lie there; 'some little share of the fault is, I am afraid, to be 'imputed to the clergy themselves.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries the young one, 'I did not ex-'pect that charge from a gentleman of your cloth. Do 'the clergy give any encouragement to such books? 'Do they not, on the contrary, cry loudly out against 'the suffering them? This is the invidious aspersion 'of the laity; and I did not expect to hear it confirmed 'by one of our own cloth.'

'Be not too impatient, young gentleman,' said the doctor; 'I do not absolutely confirm the charge of the 'laity: it is much too general, and too severe; but 'even the laity themselves do not attack them in that

'part to which you have applied your defence. They 'are not supposed such fools as to attack that religion 'to which they owe their temporal welfare. They 'are not taxed with giving any other support to infidelity, than what it draws from the ill examples of 'their lives; I mean, of the lives of some of them. 'Here too the laity carry their censures too far: for 'there are very few or none of the clergy, whose lives, 'if compared with those of the laity, can be called 'profligate; but such, indeed, is the perfect purity of 'our religion, such is the innocence and virtue which 'it exacts, to intitle us to it's glorious rewards, and to 'screen us from it's dreadful punishments, that he must 'be a very good man indeed who lives up to it. Thus, 'then, these persons argue. This man is educated in 'a perfect knowledge of religion, is learned in it's 'laws, and is by his profession obliged in a manner to 'have them always before his eyes. The rewards 'which it promises to the obedience of these laws are so 'great, and the punishments threatened on disobedience 'so dreadful, that it is impossible but all men must 'fearfully fly from the one, and as eagerly pursue the 'other. If therefore such a person lives in direct opposition to, and in a constant breach of these laws, 'the inference is obvious. There is a pleasant story in 'Matthew Paris, which I will tell you as well as I 'can remember it. Two young gentlemen, I think 'they were priests, agreed together, that whosoever 'died first, should return and acquaint his friend with 'the secrets of the other world. One of them died soon 'after, and fulfilled his promise. The whole relation 'he gave is not very material; but, among other 'things, he produced one of his hands, which Satan 'had made use of to write upon, as the moderns do on 'a card, and had sent his compliments to the priests 'for the number of souls which the wicked examples 'of their lives daily sent to hell. This story is the 'more remarkable, as it was written by a priest, and 'a great favourer of his order.'

'Excellent,'

'Excellent,' cried the old gentleman; 'what a memory you have!'

'But, Sir,' cries the young one, 'a clergyman is a man as well as another; and, if such perfect parity be expected---'

'I do not expect it,' cries the doctor; 'and I hope it will not be expected of us. The Scripture itself gives us this hope, where the best of us are said to fall twenty times a day. But sure, we may not allow the practice of any of those grosser crimes which contaminate the whole mind. We may expect an obedience to the ten commandments, and an abstinence from such notorious vices; as, in the first place, avarice, which indeed can hardly subsist without the breach of more commandments than one: indeed, it would be excessive candour to imagine, that a man, who so visibly sets his whole heart not only on this world, but on one of the most worthless things in it, (for so is money, with regard to it's uses) should be at the same time laying up his treasure in heaven. Ambition is a second vice of this sort: we are told we cannot serve God and Mammon. I might have applied this to avarice; but I chose rather to mention it here. When we see a man sneaking about in courts and levees, and doing the dirty work of great men, from the hopes of preferment; can we believe, that a fellow, whom we see to have so many hard task-masters upon earth, ever thinks of his Master which is in heaven? Must he not himself think, if he ever reflects at all, that so glorious a Master will disdain and disown a servant, who is the dutiful tool of a court favourite; and employed either as the pimp of his pleasure, or sometimes perhaps made a dirty channel, to assist in the conveyance of that corruption, which is clogging up and destroying the very vitals of his country?'

'The last vice which I shall mention, is pride. There is not in the universe a more ridiculous, nor a more contemptible animal, than a proud clergyman;

'a turkey-

'a turkey-cock, or a jack-daw, are objects of veneration, when compared with him. I do not mean, by pride, that noble dignity of mind to which goodness can only administer an adequate object, which delights in the testimony of it's own conscience, and could not, without the highest agonies, bear it's condemnation. By pride, I mean, that saucy passion, which exults in every little eventual pre-eminence over other men. Such are the ordinary gifts of nature, and the paultry presents of fortune, wit, knowledge, birth, strength, beauty, riches, titles, and rank. That passion which is ever aspiring, like a silly child, to look over the heads of all about them; which, while it servilely adheres to the great, flies from the poor, as if afraid of contamination: devouring greedily every murmur of applause, and every look of admiration; pleased and elated with all kind of respect; and hurt and enflamed with the contempt of the lowest and most despicable of fools, even with such as treated you last night disrespectfully at Vauxhall. Can such a mind as this be fixed on things above? Can such a man reflect that he hath the ineffable honour to be employed in the immediate service of his great Creator; or, can he please himself with the heart-warming hope, that his ways are acceptable in the sight of that glorious, that incomprehensible Being?'

'Hear child, hear,' cries the old gentleman; 'hear and improve your understanding.--Indeed my good friend, no one retires from you without carrying away some good instructions with him.---Learn of the doctor, Tom, and you will be the better man as long as you live.'

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' answered Tom, the doctor hath spoken a great deal of excellent truth; and, without a compliment to him, I was always a great admirer of his sermons, particularly of their oratory. But,

'*Nec tamen hoc tribuens dederim quoque cætera.*'

'I cannot agree that a clergyman is obliged to put up

up with an affront any more than another man, and 'more especially when it is paid to the order.'

'I am very sorry, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'that you should be ever liable to be affronted as 'a clergyman; and, I do assure you, if I had known 'your disposition formerly, the order should never have 'been affronted through you.'

The old gentleman now began to check his son, for his opposition to the doctor; when a servant delivered the latter a note from Amelia, which he read immediately to himself, and it contained the following words---

'MY DEAR SIR,

'SOMETHING hath happened since I saw you, 'which gives me great uneasiness, and I beg the 'favour of seeing you as soon as possible, to advise with 'you upon it. I am, your most obliged and dutiful 'daughter, AMELIA BOOTH.'

The doctor's answer was, that he would wait on the lady directly; and then turning to his friend, he asked him if he would not take a walk in the Park before dinner. 'I must go,' says he, 'to the lady who was 'with us last night; for I am afraid, by her letter, 'some bad accident hath happened to her. Come, 'young gentleman, I spoke a little too hastily to you 'just now; but I ask your pardon. Some allowance 'must be made to the warmth of your blood. I hope 'we shall in time both think alike.'

The old gentleman made his friend another compliment: and the young one declared, he hoped he should always think, and act too, with the dignity becoming his cloth. After which, the doctor took his leave for a while, and went to Amelia's lodgings.

As soon as he was gone, the old gentleman fell very severely on his son. 'Tom,' says he, 'how can you 'be such a fool, to undo by your perverseness all that 'I have been doing? Why will you not learn to 'study mankind with the attention which I have em'ployed to that purpose? Do you think, if I had af-

'fronted

'fronted this obstinate old fellow as you do, I should 'ever have engaged his friendship?'

'I cannot help it, Sir,' said Tom; 'I have not 'studied six years at the university, to give up my sen'timents to every one. It is true, indeed, he put to'gether a set of sounding words; but, in the main, I 'never heard any one talk more foolishly.'

'What of that?' cries the father; 'I never told you 'he was a wise man, nor did I ever think him so. If 'he had any understanding, he would have been a bishop 'long ago, to my certain knowledge. But, indeed, 'he hath been always a fool in private life; for I ques'tion whether he is worth 100l. in the world, more 'than his annual income. He hath given away above 'half his fortune to the Lord knows who. I believe I 'have had above 200l. of him, first and last; and, 'would you lose such a milch cow as this for want of a 'few compliments? Indeed, Tom, thou art as great 'a simpleton as himself. How do you expect to rise in 'the church, if you cannot temporize, and give into 'the opinion of your superiors?'

'I do not know, Sir,' cries Tom, 'what you mean 'by my superiors. In one sense, I own, a doctor of 'divinity is superior to a batchelor of arts, and so far I 'am ready to allow his superiority; but I understand 'Greek and Hebrew as well as he, and will maintain 'my opinion against him, or any other in the schools.'

'Tom,' cries the old gentleman, 'till thou gettest 'the better of thy conceit, I shall never have any hopes 'of thee. If thou art wise, thou wilt think every man 'thy superior, of whom thou canst get any thing; at 'least, thou wilt persuade him that thou thinkest so, 'and that is sufficient. Tom, Tom, thou hast no 'policy in thee.'

'What have I been learning these seven years,' answered he, 'in the university? However, father, I 'can account for your opinion. It is the common 'failing of old men to attribute all wisdom to them'selves. Nestor did it long ago; but if you will ac-

'quire

'quire my character at college, I fancy you will not 'think I want to go to school again.'

The father and son then went to take their walk; during which the former repeated many good lessons of policy to his son, not greatly perhaps to his edification. In truth, if the old gentleman's fondness had not in a great measure blinded him to the imperfections of his son, he would have soon perceived that he was sowing all his instructions in a soil so choaked with self-conceit, that it was utterly impossible they should ever bear any fruit.

BOOK X.

CHAP. I.

To which we will prefix no Preface.

THE doctor found Amelia alone, for Booth was gone to walk with his new revived acquaintance, Captain Trent, who seemed so pleased with the renewal of his intercourse with his old brother officer, that he had been almost continually with him from the time of their meeting at the drum.

Amelia acquainted the doctor with the purport of her message, as follows: 'I ask your pardon, my dear Sir, 'for troubling you so often with my affairs; but I 'know your extreme readiness, as well as ability, to 'assist any one with your advice. The fact is, that 'my husband hath been presented by Colonel James 'with two tickets for a masquerade, which is to be in 'a day or two; and he insists so strongly on my going 'with him, that I really do not how to refuse, without 'giving him some reason; and I am not able to invent 'any other than the true one, which you would not, I 'am sure, advise me to communicate to him. Indeed, 'I had a most narrow escape the other day; for I was 'almost drawn in inadvertently, by a very strange accident, to acquaint him with the whole matter.' She then related the serjeant's dream, with all the consequences that attended it.

The doctor considered a little with himself, and then said,

said, 'I am really, child, puzzled as well as you about 'this matter. I would by no means have you go to 'the masquerade; I do not indeed like the diversion it-'self, as I have heard it described to me: not that I 'am such a prude to suspect every woman who goes 'there of any evil intentions; but it is a pleasure of 'too loose and disorderly a kind for the recreation of a 'sober mind. Indeed, you have a still stronger and 'more particular objection. I will try myself to reason 'him out of it.'

'Indeed, it is impossible,' answered she; 'and 'therefore I would not set you about it. I never saw 'him more set on any thing. There is a party, as 'they call it, made on the occasion; and he tells me 'my refusal will disappoint all.'

'I really do not know what to advise you,' cries the doctor: 'I have told you I do not approve these diver-'sions; but yet, as your husband is so very desirous, I 'cannot think there will be any harm in going with 'him. However, I will consider of it, and do all in 'my power for you.'

Here Mrs. Atkinson came in, and the discourse on this subject ceased; but soon after Amelia renewed it, saying, there was no occasion to keep any thing a secret from her friend. They then fell to debating on the subject: but could not come to any resolution. But Mrs. Atkinson, who was in an unusual flow of spirits, cried out, 'Fear nothing, my dear Amelia; two wo-'men will surely be too hard for one man. I think, 'doctor, it exceeds Virgil---

'*Una dolo divûm si fœmina victor duorum est.*'

'Very well repeated indeed,' cries the doctor. 'Do 'you understand all Virgil as well as you seem to do 'that line?'

'I hope I do, Sir,' said she, 'and Horace too; or 'else my father threw away his time to very little pur-'pose in teaching me.'

'I ask

'I ask your pardon, Madam,' cries the doctor. 'I own it was an impertinent question.'

'Not at all, Sir,' says she; 'and if you are one of those who imagine women incapable of learning, I shall not be offended at it. I know the common opinion; but---

'*Interdum vulgus rectum videt; est ubi peccat.*'

'If I was to profess such an opinion, Madam,' said the doctor, 'Madam Dacier and yourself would bear testimony against me. The utmost indeed that I should venture, would be to question the utility of learning in a young lady's education.'

'I own,' said Mrs. Atkinson, 'as the world is constituted, it cannot be as serviceable to her fortune, as it will be to that of a man; but you will allow, doctor, that learning may afford a woman at least a reasonable and an innocent entertainment.'

'But I will suppose,' cried the doctor, 'it may have it's inconveniences. As, for instance, if a learned lady should meet with an unlearned husband, might she not be apt to despise him?'

'I think not,' cries Mrs. Atkinson; 'and if I may be allowed the instance, I think I have shewn, myself, that women who have learning themselves, can be contented without that qualification in a man.'

'To be sure,' cries the doctor, 'there may be other qualifications, which may have their weight in the balance. But let us take the other side of the question, and suppose the learned of both sexes to meet in the matrimonial union; may it not afford one excellent subject of disputation, which is the most learned.'

'Not at all,' cries Mrs. Atkinson; 'for if they had both learning and good sense, they would soon see on which side the superiority lay.'

'But if the learned man,' said the doctor, 'should be a little unreasonable in his opinion, are you sure

'that the learned woman would preserve her duty to 'her husband, and submit?'

'But why,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, must we necessarily suppose that a learned man would be unreasonable?'

'Nay, Madam,' said the doctor, 'I am not your 'husband; and you shall not hinder me from supposing 'what I please. Surely it is not such a paradox, to 'conceive that a man of learning would be unreasonable. Are there no unreasonable opinions in very 'learned authors, even among the critics themselves? 'For instance, what can be a more strange, and indeed unreasonable opinion, than to prefer the Metamorphoses of Ovid to the Æneid of Virgil.'

'It would be indeed so strange,' cries the lady, 'that 'you shall not persuade me it was ever the opinion of 'any man.'

'Perhaps not,' cries the doctor; 'and I believe you 'and I should not differ in our judgments of any person 'who maintained such an opinion. What a taste must 'he have!'

'A most most contemptible one, indeed!' cries Mrs. Atkinson.

'I am satisfied,' cries the doctor. 'And in the 'words of your own Horace, *Verbum non amplius addam.*'

'But how provoking is this!' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'to draw one in, in such a manner. I protest, I was 'so warm in the defence of my favourite Virgil, that I 'was not aware of your design; but all your triumph 'depends on a supposition that one should be so unfortunate as to meet with the silliest fellow in the 'world.'

'Not in the least,' cries the doctor. 'Doctor Bentley was not such a person; and yet he would have 'quarrelled, I am convinced, with any wife in the 'world, in behalf of one of his corrections. I do not 'suppose he would have given up his *ingentia fata* to 'an angel.'

'But

'But do you think,' said she, 'if I had loved him, I would have contended with him?'

'Perhaps you might sometimes,' said the doctor, 'be of these sentiments; but you remember your own Virgil, *Varium et mutabile semper fœmina.*'

'Nay, Amelia,' said Mrs. Atkinson, 'you are now concerned as well as I am; for he hath now abused the whole sex, and quoted the severest thing that ever was said against us, though I allow it is one of the finest.'

'With all my heart, my dear,' cries Amelia. 'I have the advantage of you, however, for I do not understand him.'

'Nor doth she understand much better than yourself,' cries the doctor, 'or she would not admire nonsense, though in Virgil.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' said she.

'And pardon me, Madam,' cries the doctor, with a feigned seriousness; 'I say, a boy in the fourth form at Eton would be whipped, or would deserve to be whipped at least, who made the neuter gender agree with the feminine. You have heard, however, that Virgil left his Æneid incorrect; and, perhaps, had he lived to correct it, we should not have seen the faults we now see in it.'

'Why, it is very true as you say, doctor,' cries Mrs. Atkinson; 'there seems to be a false concord. I protest I never thought of it before.'

'And yet this is the Virgil,' answered the doctor, 'that you are so fond of, who hath made you all of the neuter gender; or, as we say in English, he hath made mere animals of you: for, if we translate it thus,

'Woman is a various and changeable animal,

'there will be no fault, I believe, unless in point of civility to the ladies.'

Mrs. Atkinson had just time to tell the doctor he was a provoking creature, before the arrival of Booth and his

his friend put an end to that learned discourse, in which neither of the parties had greatly recommended themselves to each other, the doctor's opinion of the lady being not at all heightened by her progress in the classics; and she, on the other hand, having conceived a great dislike in her heart towards the doctor, which would have raged, perhaps, with no less fury from the consideration that he had been her husband.

CHAP. II.

What happened at the Masquerade.

FROM this time to the day of the masqerade, nothing happened of consequence enough to have a place in this history.

On that day Colonel James came to Booth's about nine in the evening, where he stayed for Mrs. James, who did not come till near eleven. The four masques then set out together in several chairs; and all proceeded to the Hay-market.

When they arrived at the Opera-house, the colonel and Mrs. James presently left them; nor did Booth and his lady remain long together, but were soon divided from each other by different masques.

A domino soon accosted the lady, and had her away to the upper-end of the farthest room on the right-hand, where both the masques sat down: nor was it long before the domino began to make very fervent love to the she. It would, perhaps, be tedious to the reader to run through the whole process, which was not indeed in the most romantic style. The lover seemed to consider his mistress as a mere woman of this world, and seemed rather to apply to her avarice and ambition, than to her softer passions.

As he was not so careful to conceal his true voice as the lady was, she soon discovered that this lover of her's was no other than her old friend the peer, and presently a thought suggested itself to her of making an advantage of this accident. She gave him therefore an intimation that she knew him, and expressed some astonishment at his having found her out. 'I suspect,'

ſays ſhe, 'my lord, that you have a friend in the wo-'man where I now lodge, as well as you had in Mrs. 'Ellifon.' My lord proteſted the contrary. To which 'ſhe anſwered, 'Nay, my lord, do not defend her ſo 'earneſtly, till you are ſure I ſhould have been angry 'with her.'

At theſe words, which were accompanied with a very bewitching ſoftneſs, my lord flew into raptures rather too ſtrong for the place he was in. Theſe the lady gently checked, and begged him to take care they were not obſerved; for that her huſband, for aught ſhe knew, was then in the room.

Colonel James came now up, and ſaid---'So Madam, 'I have the good fortune to find you again; I have 'been extremely miſerable ſince I loſt you.' The lady 'anſwered in her maſquerade voice, that ſhe did not 'know him. 'I am Colonel James,' ſaid he, in a whiſper. 'Indeed, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'you are miſ-'taken; I have no acquaintance with any Colonel 'James.'---'Madam,' anſwered he in a whiſper likewiſe, 'I am poſitive I am not miſtaken; you are cer-'tainly Mrs. Booth.'---'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'you 'are very impertinent, and I beg you will leave me.' My lord then interpoſed, and ſpeaking in his own voice, aſſured the colonel that the lady was a woman of quality, and that they were engaged in a converſation together: upon which the colonel aſked the lady's pardon; for, as there was nothing remarkable in her dreſs, he really believed he had been miſtaken.'

He then went again hunting through the rooms, and ſoon after found Booth walking without his maſk between two ladies, one of whom was in a blue domino, and the other in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs. 'Will,' cries the colonel, 'do you know what is become of our 'wives; for I have ſeen neither of them ſince I have 'been in the room?' Booth anſwered, that he ſuppoſed they were both together, and they ſhould find them both by and by. 'What,' cries the lady in the blue domino, 'are you both come upon duty then with

'your wives?---As for yours, Mr. Alderman,' said she to the colonel, 'I make no question but she is got 'into much better company than her husband's.---'How can you be so cruel, Madam?' said the shepherdess; 'you will make him beat his wife by and by, 'for he is a military man, I assure you.'---'In the 'trained bands, I presume,' cries the domino, 'for he 'is plainly dated from the city.'---'I own, indeed,' cries the other, 'the gentleman smells strongly of 'Thames Street; and, if I may venture to guess, of 'the honourable calling of a taylor.'

'Why, what the devil hast thou picked up here?' cries James.

'Upon my soul, I do not know,' answered Booth; 'I wish you would take one of them at least.'

'What say you, Madam?' cries the domino; 'will you go with the colonel? I assure you, you 'have mistaken your man, for he is no less a person 'than the great Colonel James himself.'

'No wonder, then, that Mr. Booth gives him his 'choice of us; it is the proper office of a caterer, in 'which capacity Mr. Booth hath, I am told, the honour to serve the noble colonel.'

'Much good may it do you with your ladies,' said James; 'I will go in pursuit of better game.' At which words he walked off.

'You are a true sportsman,' cries the shepherdess; 'for your only pleasure, I believe, lies in the pursuit.'

'Do you know the gentleman, Madam?' cries the domino.

'Who doth not know him?' answered the shepherdess.

'What is his character?' cries the domino; 'for 'though I have jested with him, I only know him by 'sight.'

'I know nothing very particular in his character,' cries the shepherdess. 'He gets every handsome wo-'man he can, and so they do all.'

'I suppose then he is not married,' said the domino.

'O yes;

'O yes, and married for love too,' answered the other; 'but he hath loved away all his love for her 'long ago, and now, he says, she makes as fine an ob-'ject of hatred. I think, if the fellow ever appears to 'have any wit, it is when he abuses his wife; and 'luckily for him, that is his favourite topic. I do 'not know the poor wretch; but as he describes her, 'it is a miserable animal.'

'I know her very well,' cries the other, 'and I am 'much mistaken if she is not even with him: but hang 'him, what is become of Booth?'

At this instant a great noise arose near that part where the two ladies were. This was occasioned by a large assembly of young fellows, whom they call bucks, who were got together, and were enjoying, as the phrase is, a letter which one of them had found in the room.

Curiosity has it's votaries among all ranks of people: whenever, therefore, an object of this appears, it is as sure of attracting a crowd in the assemblies of the polite, as in those of their inferiors.

When this crowd was gathered together, one of the bucks, at the desire of his companions, as well as of all present, performed the part of a public orator, and read out the following letter, which we shall give the reader, together with the comments of the orator himself, and of all his audience.

The orator, then, being mounted on a bench, began as follows---

'Here beginneth the third chapter of Saint-----Pox 'on it, Jack, what is the saint's name? I have 'forgot.'

'Timothy, you blockhead!' answered another; 'Timothy.'

'Well, then,' cries the orator, 'of Saint Timothy.'

"Sir, I am very sorry to have any occasion of wri-"ting on the following subject, in a country that is "honoured with the name of Christian; much more "am I concerned to address myself to a man whose

"many

" many advantages, derived both from nature and
" fortune, should demand the highest return of gratitude
" to the great Giver of all those good things. Is not
" such a man guilty of the highest ingratitude to that
" most beneficent Being, by a direct and avowed dis-
" obedience of his most positive laws and commands?

" I need not tell you that adultery is forbid in the
" laws of the Decalogue; nor need I, I hope, men-
" tion that it is as expressly forbid in the New Testa-
" ment."

'You see, therefore,' said the orator, 'what the
' law is, and therefore none of you will be able to
' plead ignorance, when you come to the Old Bailey in
' the other world. But here goes again---

" If it had not been so expressly forbidden in Scrip-
" ture, still the law of nature would have yielded light
" enough for us to have discovered the great horror and
" atrociousness of this crime.

" And accordingly we find, that nations, where the
" Sun of Righteousness hath yet never shined, have
" punished the adulterer with the most exemplary pains
" and penalties; not only the polite heathens, but the
" most barbarous nations, have concurred in these; in
" many places the most severe and shameful corporal
" punishments, and in some, and those not a few, death
" itself hath been inflicted on this crime.

" And sure in a human sense there is scarce any
" guilt which deserves to be more severely punished.
" It includes in it almost every injury and every mis-
" chief which one man can do to or can bring on ano-
" ther. It is robbing him of his property;"---
'Mind that, ladies,' said the orator; 'you are all
' the property of your husbands;---" and of that
" property which, if he is a good man, he values
" above all others. It is poisoning that fountain
" whence he hath a right to derive the sweetest and
" most innocent pleasure, the most cordial comfort,
" the most solid friendship, and most faithful assist-
" ance in all his affairs, wants, and distresses. It
" is

" is the destruction of his peace of mind, and even " of his reputation. The ruin of both wife and husband, and sometimes of the whole family, is the probable consequence of this fatal injury. Domestic " happiness is the end of almost all our pursuits, and " the common reward of all our pains. When men " find themselves for ever barred from this delightful " fruition, they are lost to all industry, and grow careless of all their wordly affairs. Thus they become " bad subjects, bad relations, bad friends, and bad " men. Hatred and revenge are the wretched passions " which boil in their minds. Despair and madness " very commonly ensue, and murder and suicide often " close the dreadful scene."

'Thus, gentlemen and ladies, you see the scene is 'closed. So here ends the first act, and thus begins 'the second---

" I have here attempted to lay before you a picture " of this vice, the horror of which no colours of mine " can exaggerate. But what pencil can delineate the " horrors of that punishment which the Scripture denounces against it!

" And for what will you subject yourself to this " punishment? or for what reward will you inflict all " this misery on another? I will add, on your friend! " For the possession of a woman: for the pleasure of a " moment! But if neither virtue nor religion can restrain your inordinate appetites, are there not many " women as handsome as your friend's wife, whom, " though not with innocence, you may possess with " a much less degree of guilt? What motive, then, " can thus hurry you on to the destruction of yourself and " your friend? Doth the peculiar rankness of the guilt " add zest to the sin? Doth it enhance the pleasure as " much as we may be assured it will the punishment?

" But if you can be so lost to all sense of fear, and of " shame, and of goodness, as not to be debarred by " the evil which you are to bring on yourself, by the " extreme baseness of the action, nor by the ruin in

" which

"which you are to involve others; let me still urge "the difficulty, I may say the impossibility, of the "success. You are attacking a fortress on a rock; a "chastity so strongly defended, as well by a happy "natural disposition of mind, as by the strongest prin- "ciples of religion and virtue, implanted by educa- "tion, and nourished and improved by habit, that the "woman must be invincible, even without that firm "and constant affection of her husband, which would "guard a much looser and worse-disposed heart. "What therefore are you attempting, but to intro- "duce distrust, and perhaps disunion, between an in- "nocent and a happy couple; in which too you cannot "succeed without bringing, I am convinced, certain "destruction on your own head?

"Desist, therefore, let me advise you, from this "enormous crime; retreat from the vain attempt of "climbing a precipice, which it is impossible you "should ever ascend; where you must probably soon "fall into utter perdition, and can have no other hope "but of dragging down your best friend into perdi- "tion with you.

"I can think of but one argument more, and that, "indeed, a very bad one: you throw away that time "in an impossible attempt, which might, in other pla- "ces crown your sinful endeavours with success."

'And so ends the dismal ditty.'

'D---n me,' cries one, 'did ever mortal hear such 'd---n'd stuff?'

'Upon my soul,' said another, 'I like the last argu- 'ment well enough. There is some sense in that: for 'd---n me if I had not rather go to Douglass at any 'time, than to follow a virtuous b----for a fortnight.'

'Tom,' says one of them, 'let us set the ditty to 'music; let us subscribe to have it set by Handel; it 'will make an excellent oratorio.'

'D---n me, Jack,' says another, 'we'll have it set to 'a psalm-tune, and we'll sing it next Sunday at St. 'James's church, and I'll bear a bob, d---n me.'

'Fig

'Fie upon it, gentlemen! fie upon it!' ſaid a friar who came up; 'do you think there is any wit and humour in this ribaldry? or, if there were, would it make any atonement for abuſing religion and virtue?'

'Hey-day!' cries one, 'this is a friar in good earneſt.'

'Whatever I am,' ſaid the friar, 'I hope at leaſt, you are not what you appear to be. Heaven forbid, for the ſake of our poſterity, that you ſhould be gentlemen.'

'Jack,' cries one, 'let us toſs the friar in a blanket.'

'Me in a blanket!' ſaid the friar: 'by the dignity of a man, I will twiſt the neck of every one of you as ſure as ever the neck of a dunghill-cock was twiſted!' At which words he pulled off his maſk, and the tremendous majeſty of Colonel Bath appeared, from which the bucks fled away as faſt as the Trojans heretofore from the face of Achilles. The colonel did not think it worth while to purſue any other of them except him who had the letter in his hand, which the colonel deſired to ſee, and the other delivered, ſaying it was very much at his ſervice.

The colonel, being poſſeſſed of the letter, retired as privately as he could, in order to give it a careful peruſal; for, badly as it had been read by the orator, there were ſome paſſages in it which had pleaſed the colonel; he had juſt gone through it, when Booth paſſed by him, upon which the colonel called to him, and delivering him the letter, bid him put it in his pocket, and read it at his leiſure. He made many encomiums upon it, and told Booth it would be of ſervice to him, and was proper for all young men to read.

Booth had not yet ſeen his wife; but as he concluded ſhe was ſafe with Mrs. James, he was not uneaſy. He had been prevented the ſearching farther after her, by the lady in the blue domino, who had joined him again. Booth had now made theſe diſcoveries: that the lady was pretty well acquainted with him; that ſhe was a woman of faſhion; and that ſhe had a particular

regard

regard for him. But though he was a gay man, he was in reality so fond of his Amelia, that he thought of no other woman; wherefore, though not absolutely a Joseph, as we have already seen, yet could he not be guilty of premeditated inconstancy. He was indeed so very cold and insensible to the hints which were given him, that the lady began to complain of his dullness. When the shepherdess again came up, and heard this accusation against him, she confirmed it, saying---'I 'do assure you, Madam, he is the dullest fellow in the 'world. Indeed, I should almost take you for his 'wife, by finding you a second time with him; for I 'do assure you the gentleman very seldom keeps any 'other company.'---'Are you so well acquainted with 'him, Madam?' said the domino. 'I have had that 'honour longer than your ladyship, I believe,' answered the shepherdess. 'Possibly you may, Madam,' cries the domino; 'but I wish you would not inter-'rupt us at present; for we have some business toge-'ther.'---'I believe, Madam,' answered the shepherd-'ess, 'my business with the gentleman is altogether as 'important as yours; and therefore your ladyship may 'withdraw if you please.'---'My dear ladies,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will not quarrel about me.'---'Not at all,' answered the domino; 'since you are so 'indifferent, I resign my pretensions with all my heart. 'If you had not been the dullest fellow upon earth, I 'am convinced you must have discovered me.' She then went off muttering to herself, that she was satisfied the shepherdess was some wretched creature whom nobody knew.

The shepherdess overheard the sarcasm, and answered it, by asking Booth what contemptible wretch he had picked up. 'Indeed, Madam,' said he, 'you 'know as much of her as I do; she is a masquerade 'acquaintance like yourself.---'Like me!' repeated she. 'Do you think, if this had been our first ac-'quaintance, I should have wasted so much time with 'you as I have? For your part, indeed, I believe a

'woman

'woman will get very little advantage by her having 'been formerly intimate with you.'---'I do not know, 'Madam,' said Booth, 'that I deserve that character, 'any more than I know the person that now gives it 'me.'---'And you have the assurance, then,' said she in her own voice, 'to affect not to remember me.'---'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have heard that voice before; but upon my soul, I do not recollect it.'---'Do you recollect,' said she, 'no woman that you have 'used with the highest barbarity? I will not say 'ingratitude.'---'No, upon my honour!' answered Booth. 'Mention not honour,' said she, 'thou 'wretch: for, hardened as thou art, I could shew thee 'a face that, in spite of thy consummate impudence, 'would confound thee with shame and horror. Do'st 'thou not yet know me?'---'I do, Madam, indeed,' answered Booth, 'and I confess, that of all women in 'the world you have the most reason for what you 'said.'

Here a long dialogue ensued between the gentleman and the lady, whom, I suppose, I need not mention to have been Miss Matthews; but as it consisted chiefly of violent upbraidings on her side, and excuses on his, I despair of making it entertaining to the reader; and shall therefore return to the colonel, who having searched all the rooms with the utmost diligence, without finding the woman he looked for, began to suspect that he had before fixed on the right person, and that Amelia had denied herself to him, being pleased with her paramour, whom he had discovered to be the noble peer.

He resolved, therefore, as he could have no sport himself, to spoil that of others; accordingly, he found out Booth, and asked him again what was become of both their wives; for that he had searched all over the rooms, and could find neither of them.

Booth was now a little alarmed at this account; and parting with Miss Matthews, went along with the colonel in search of his wife. As for Miss Matthews, he had at length pacified her with a promise to make her a

 visit;

visit; which promise she extorted from him, swearing bitterly, in the most solemn manner, unless he made it to her, she would expose both him and herself at the masquerade.

As he knew the violence of the lady's passions, and to what heights they were capable of rising, he was obliged to come into these terms; for he had, I am convinced, no fear upon earth equal to that of Amelia's knowing what it was in the power of Miss Matthews to communicate to her, and which, to conceal from her, he had already undergone so much uneasiness.

The colonel led Booth to the place where he had seen the peer and Amelia (such he was now well convinced she was) sitting together. Booth no sooner saw her, than he said to the colonel---' Sure that is my wife in ' conversation with that masque.'---' I took her for ' your lady myself,' said the colonel, ' but I found ' I was mistaken. (Hark ye, that is my Lord-----, ' and I have seen that very lady with him all this ' night.)

This conversation passed at a little distance, and out of the hearing of the supposed Amelia; when Booth looking stedfastly at the lady, declared with an oath, that he was positive the colonel was in the right. She then beckoned to him with her fan; upon which, he went directly to her; and she asked him to go home, which he very readily consented to. The peer then walked off; the colonel went in pursuit of his wife, or of some other woman; and Booth and his lady returned in two chairs to their lodgings.

CHAP. III.

Consequences of the Masquerade, not uncommon nor surprizing.

THE lady getting first out of her chair, ran hastily up into the nursery to the children; for such was Amelia's constant method at her return home, at whatever hour. Booth then walked into the dining-room; where he had not been long, before Amelia came down to him, and with a most chearful countenance, said--
' My

'My dear, I fancy we have neither of us ſupped; ſhall 'I go down and ſee whether there is any cold meat in 'the houſe?'

'For yourſelf, if you pleaſe,' anſwered Booth; 'but 'I ſhall eat nothing.'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia; 'I hope you have 'not loſt your appetite at the maſquerade?' For ſupper was a meal at which he generally eat very heartily.

'I know not well what I have loſt,' ſaid Booth; 'I 'find myſelf diſordered. My head aches. I know not 'what is the matter with me.'

'Indeed, my dear, you frighten me,' ſaid Amelia; 'you look indeed diſordered. I wiſh the maſquerade 'had been far enough, before you had gone thither.'

'Would to Heaven it had!' cries Booth; 'but that 'is over now. But pray, Amelia, anſwer me one 'queſtion: who was that gentleman with you, when I 'came up to you?'

'The gentleman, my dear,' ſaid Amelia; 'what 'gentleman?'

'The gentleman, the nobleman, when I came up: 'ſure I ſpeak plain.' 'Upon my word, my dear, I 'do not underſtand you,' anſwered ſhe; 'I did not 'know one perſon at the maſquerade.'

'How!' ſaid he; 'what, ſpend the whole evening 'with a maſque without knowing him?'

'Why, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'you know we were not 'together.'

'I know we were not,' ſaid he: 'but what is that 'to the purpoſe? ſure you anſwer me ſtrangely. I 'know we were not together; and therefore I aſk you 'whom you were with?'

'Nay, but, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'can I tell people 'in maſks?'

'I ſay again, Madam,' ſaid he, 'would you converſe two hours or more with a maſque whom you did 'not know?'

'Indeed,' child,' ſays ſhe, 'I know nothing of the

'methods of a masquerade: for I never was at one in 'my life.'

'I wish to Heaven you had not been at this,' cries Booth. 'Nay, you will wish so yourself, if you tell 'me truth. What have I said? do I, can I, suspect 'you of not speaking truth? Since you are ignorant 'then, I will inform you; the man you have conversed 'with was no other than Lord ------.'

'And is that the reason,' said she, 'you wish I had 'not been there?'

'And is not that reason,' answered he, 'sufficient? 'Is he not the last man upon earth with whom I would 'have you converse?'

'So you really wish then that I had not been at the 'masquerade?'

'I do,' cried he, 'from my soul.'

'So may I ever be able,' cried she, to indulge you 'in every wish as in this. I was not there.'

'Do not trifle, Amelia,' cried he; 'you would not 'jest with me, if you knew the situation of my mind.'

'Indeed, I do not jest with you,' said she. 'Upon 'my honour, I was not there. Forgive me this first 'deceit I ever practised; and, indeed, it shall be the 'last, for I have paid severely for this by the uneasiness 'it hath given me.' She then revealed to him the whole secret, which was thus---

I think it hath been already mentioned in some part of this history, that Amelia and Mrs. Atkinson were exactly of the same make and stature, and that there was likewise a very near resemblance between their voices. When Mrs. Atkinson, therefore, found that Amelia was so extremely averse to the masquerade, she proposed to go thither in her stead, and to pass upon Booth for his own wife.

This was afterwards very easily executed; for when they left Booth's lodgings, Amelia, who went last to her chair, ran back to fetch her masque, as she pretended, which she had purposely left behind. She then whipt off her domino, and threw it over Mrs. Atkin-son,

ſon, who ſtood ready to receive it, and ran immediately down ſtairs, and ſtepping into Amelia's chair, proceeded with the reſt to the maſquerade.

As her ſtature exactly ſuited that of Amelia, ſhe had very little difficulty to carry on the impoſition; for, beſides the natural reſemblance of their voices, and the opportunity of ſpeaking in a feigned one, ſhe had ſcarce an intercourſe of ſix words with Booth during the whole time; for the moment they got into the croud, ſhe took the firſt opportunity of ſlipping from him. And he, as the reader may remember, being ſeized by other women, and concluding his wife to be ſafe with Mrs. James, was very well ſatisfied, till the colonel ſet him upon the ſearch, as we have ſeen before.

Mrs. Atkinſon, the moment ſhe came home, ran up ſtairs to the nurſery, where ſhe found Amelia, and told her in haſte that ſhe might very eaſily carry on the deceit with her huſband; for that ſhe might tell him what ſhe pleaſed to invent, as they had not been a minute together during the whole evening.

Booth was no ſooner ſatisfied that his wife had not been from home that evening, than he fell into raptures with her, gave her a thouſand tender careſſes, blamed his own judgment, acknowledged the goodneſs of her's, and vowed never to oppoſe her will more in any one inſtance during his life.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was ſtill in the nurſery with her maſquerade dreſs, was then ſummoned down ſtairs; and when Booth ſaw her, and heard her ſpeak in her mimic tone, he declared he was not ſurprized at his having been impoſed upon, for that if they were both in the ſame diſguiſe, he ſhould ſcarce be able to diſcover the difference between them.

They then ſat down to half an hour's chearful converſation: after which, they retired all in the moſt perfect good humour.

CHAP. IV.

Consequences of the Masquerade.

WHEN Booth rose in the morning, he found in his pocket the letter which had been delivered to him by Colonel Bath; which had not chance brought to his remembrance, he might possibly have never recollected.

He had now, however, the curiosity to open the letter, and beginning to read it, the matter of it drew him on, till he perused the whole; for notwithstanding the contempt cast upon it by those learned critics, the bucks, neither the subject, nor the manner in which it was treated, was altogether contemptible.

But there was still another motive which induced Booth to read the whole letter; and this was, that he presently thought he knew the hand. He did, indeed, immediately conclude it was Dr. Harrison's, for the doctor wrote a very remarkable one; and this letter contained all the particulars of the doctor's character.

He had just finished a second reading of this letter, when the doctor himself entered the room. The good man was impatient to know the success of Amelia's stratagem; for he bore towards her all that love which esteem can create in a good mind, without the assistance of those selfish considerations, from which the love of wives and children may be ordinarily deduced. The latter of which, nature, by very subtle and refined reasoning, suggests to us to be part of our dear selves; and the former, as long as they remain the objects of our liking, that same nature is furnished with very plain and fertile arguments to recommend to our affections. But to raise that affection in the human breast which the doctor had for Amelia, nature is forced to use a kind of logic, which is no more understood by a bad man, than Sir Isaac Newton's doctrine of colours is by one born blind. And yet in reality it contains nothing more abstruse than this, that an injury is the object of anger, danger of fear, and praise of vanity: for in the

same

same simple manner it may be asserted, that goodness is the object of love.

The doctor enquired immediately for his child, (for so he often called Amelia.) Booth answered, that he had left her asleep; for that she had had but a restless night. 'I hope she is not disordered by the masquerade?' cries the doctor. Booth answered, he believed she would be very well when she waked. 'I fancy,' said he, 'her gentle spirits were a little too much fluttered 'last night; that is all.'

'I hope then,' said the doctor, 'you will never more 'insist on her going to such places, but know your own 'happiness in having a wife that hath the discretion to 'avoid those places, which, though perhaps they may 'not be, as some represent them, such brothels of vice 'and debauchery as would impeach the character of 'every virtuous woman who was seen at them; are 'certainly, however, scenes of riot, disorder, and in-'temperance, very improper to be frequented by a 'chaste and sober christian matron.'

Booth declared, that he was very sensible of his error; and that so far from soliciting his wife to go to another masquerade, he did not intend ever to go thither any more himself.

The doctor highly approved the resolution; and then Booth said---'And I thank you, my dear friend, as 'well as my wife's discretion, that she was not at the 'masquerade last night.' He then related to the doctor the discovery of the plot, and the good man was greatly pleased with the success of the stratagem, and that Booth took it in such good part.

'But, Sir,' says Booth, 'I had a letter given me 'by a noble colonel there, which is written in a hand 'so very like yours, that I could almost swear to it. 'Nor is the style, as far as I can guess, unlike your 'own. Here it is, Sir. Do you own the letter, doc-'tor, or do you not?'

The doctor took the letter; and having looked at it a moment,

a moment, said---'And did the colonel himself give 'you this letter?'

'The colonel himself,' answered Booth.

'Why then,' cries the doctor, 'he is surely the most 'impudent fellow that the world ever produced. What, 'did he deliver it with an air of triumph?'

'He delivered it me with air enough,' cries Booth, 'after his own manner, and bid me read for my edification. To say the truth, I am a little surprized 'that he should single me out, of all mankind, to deliver the letter to; I do not think I deserve the character of such a husband. It is well I am not so very 'forward to take an affront as some folks.'

'I am glad to see you are not,' said the doctor; 'and your behaviour in this affair becomes both the 'man of sense and the christian: for it would be surely 'the greatest folly, as well as the most daring impiety, 'to risque your own life for the impertinence of a fool. 'As long as you are assured of the virtue of your own 'wife, it is wisdom in you to despise the efforts of such 'a wretch. Not indeed that your wife accuses him of 'any downright attack, though she had observed 'enough of his behaviour to give offence to her delicacy.'

'You astonish me, doctor,' said Booth. 'What 'can you mean? My wife dislike his behaviour! hath 'the colonel ever offended her?'

'I do not say he hath ever offended her by any open 'declarations. Nor hath he done any thing which, 'according to the most romantic notion of honour, you 'can or ought to resent; but there is something extremely nice in the chastity of a truly virtuous woman.'

'And hath my wife really complained of any thing 'of that kind in the colonel?'

'Look ye, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'I 'will have no quarrelling or challenging; I find I have 'made some mistake, and therefore I insist upon it, by 'all the rights of friendship, that you give me your

'word

'word of honour you will not quarrel with the colonel 'on this account.'

'I do with all my heart,' ſaid Booth; 'for if I did 'not know your character, I ſhould abſolutely think 'you was jeſting with me. I do not think you have 'miſtaken my wife, but I am ſure ſhe hath miſtaken 'the colonel: and hath miſconſtrued ſome overſtrained 'point of gallantry, ſomething of the Quixote kind, 'into a deſign againſt her chaſtity; but I have that 'opinion of the colonel, that I hope you will not be 'offended, when I declare I know not which of you 'two I ſhould be the ſooner jealous of.'

'I would by no means have you jealous of any one,' cries the doctor; 'for I think my child's virtue may 'be firmly relied on; but I am convinced ſhe would 'not have ſaid what ſhe did to me, without a cauſe; 'nor ſhould I, without ſuch a conviction, have written 'that letter to the colonel, as I own to you I did. 'However, nothing I ſay hath yet paſt, which, even 'in the opinion of falſe honour, you are at liberty to 'reſent; but as to declining any great intimacy, if 'you will take my advice, I think that would be pru'dent.'

'You will pardon me, my deareſt friend,' ſaid Booth; 'but I have really ſuch an opinion of the colo'nel, that I would pawn my life upon his honour; 'and as for women, I do not believe he ever had an at'tachment to any.'

'Be it ſo,' ſaid the doctor. 'I have only two 'things to inſiſt on. The firſt is, that if ever you 'change your opinion, this letter may not be the ſub'ject of any quarrelling or fighting; the other is, that 'you never mention a word of this to your wife. By 'the latter I ſhall ſee whether you can keep a ſecret; 'and if it is no otherwiſe material, it will be a whole'ſome exerciſe to your mind; for the practice of any 'virtue is a kind of mental exerciſe, and ſerves to 'maintain the health and vigour of the ſoul.'

'I faithfully promiſe both,' cries Booth. And now the

the breakfast entered the room, as did soon after Amelia and Mrs. Atkinson.

The conversation ran chiefly on the masquerade; and Mrs. Atkinson gave an account of several adventures there; but whether she told the whole truth with regard to herself, I will not determine; for certain it is, she never once mentioned the name of the noble peer. Among the rest, she said there was a young fellow that had preached a sermon there upon a stool, in praise of adultery, she believed; for she could not get near enough to hear the particulars.

During that transaction, Booth had been engaged with the blue domino in another room, so that he knew nothing of it: so that what Mrs. Atkinson had now said, only brought to his mind the doctor's letter to Colonel Bath, for to him he supposed it was written; and the idea of the colonel being a lover to Amelia, struck him in so ridiculous a light, that it threw him into a violent fit of laughter.

The doctor, who, from the natural jealousy of an author, imputed the agitation of Booth's muscles to his own sermon or letter on that subject, was a little offended; and said gravely---'I should be glad to know 'the reason of this immoderate mirth. Is adultery a 'matter of jest in your opinion?'

'Far otherwise,' answered Booth. 'But how is it 'possible to refrain from laughter at the idea of a fel'low preaching a sermon in favour of it at such a 'place!'

'I am very sorry,' cries the doctor, 'to find the age 'is grown to so scandalous a degree of licentiousness, 'that we have thrown off not only virtue, but decency. 'How abandoned must be the manners of any nation 'where such insults upon religion and morality can be 'committed with impunity: no man is fonder of true 'wit and humour than myself; but to prophane sacred 'things with jest and scoffing is a sure sign of a weak 'and wicked mind. It is the very vice which Homer 'attacks in the odious character of Thersites. The

'ladies

'ladies must excuse my repeating the passage to you, 'as I know you have Greek enough to understand it.

'Ὃς ῥ' ἔπεα φρεσὶν ᾗσιν ἄκοσμά τε, πολλά τε ᾔδη.
'Μὰψ, ἀτὰρ οὐ κατὰ κόσμον ἐριζέμεναι βασιλεῦσιν
'Ἔμμεναι.*

And immediately adds,

'——αἴσχιστος δὲ ἀνὴρ ὑπὸ Ἴλιον ἦλθε.†

'Horace again describes such a rascal:

'------------------*Solutos*
'*Qui captat risus hominum famamque dicacis.*‡

'And says of him,

'*Hic niger est; hunc tu, Romane, caveto.*'||

'O charming Homer!' said Mrs. Atkinson; 'how 'much above all other writers!'

'I ask your pardon, Madam,' said the doctor, 'I 'forgot you was a scholar; but, indeed, I did not 'know you understood Greek as well as Latin.'

'I do not pretend,' said she, 'to be a critic in the 'Greek; but I think I am able to read a little of Ho-'mer, at least with the help of looking now and then 'into the Latin.'

'Pray, Madam,' said the doctor, how do you like 'this passage in the speech of Hector to Andromache?---

'——Εἰς οἶκον ἰοῦσα τὰ σαυτῆς ἔργα κόμιζε,

* Thus paraphrased by Mr. Pope—
'Aw'd by no shame, by no respect controul'd,
'In scandal busy, in reproaches bold:
'With witty malice studious to defame;
'Scorn all his joy, and laughter all his aim.

† He was the greatest scoundrel in the whole army.

‡ 'Who trivial bursts of laughter strives to raise,
'And courts of prating petulance the praise.'
FRANCIS.

|| This man is black; do thou, O Roman, shun this man.

'Ἰςὸν

'Ἰςον τ' ἠλακάτην τε καὶ ἀμφιϖόλοισικέλευε
'Εργον ἐϖοίχεσθαι.*

'Or how do you like the character of Hippodamia; 'who, by being the pretticſt girl, and beſt workwoman 'of her age, got one of the beſt huſbands in all Troy? 'I think, indeed, Homer enumerates her diſcretion 'with her other qualifications; but I do not remember 'he gives us one character of a woman of learning. Do 'not you conceive this to be a great omiſſion in that 'charming poet? However, Juvenal makes you 'amends, for he talks very abundantly of the learning 'of the Roman ladies in his time.'

'You are a provoking man, doctor,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon. 'Where is the harm in a woman's having 'learning as well as a man?'

'Let me aſk you another queſtion,' ſaid the doctor. 'Where is the harm in a man's being a fine performer with a needle as well as a woman? And 'yet, anſwer me honeſtly, would you greatly chuſe to 'marry a man with a thimble upon his finger? 'Would you in earneſt think a needle became the hand 'of your huſband as well as a halbert?'

'As to war, I am with you,' ſaid ſhe. 'Homer 'himſelf, I well remember, makes Hector tell his wife, 'that warlike works---what is the Greek word--'*Polemy*---ſomething---belonged to men only; and I 'readily agree to it. I hate a maſculine woman, an 'Amazon, as much as you can do: but what is there 'maſculine in learning?'

'Nothing ſo maſculine, take my word for it. As 'for your *Polemy*, I look upon it to be the true cha'racteriſtic of a devil. So Homer every where charac'terizes Mars.'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, 'you had 'better not diſpute with the doctor; for, upon my 'word, he will be too hard for you.'

'Nay, I beg you will not interfere,' cries Mrs. At-

* Go home, and mind your own buſineſs. Follow your ſpinning, and keep your maids to work.

kinſon;

kinſon; 'I am ſure you can be no judge in theſe 'matters.'

At which the doctor and Booth burſt into a loud laugh; and Amelia, though fearful of giving her friend offence, could not forbear a gentle ſmile.

'You may laugh, gentlemen, if you pleaſe,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'but, I thank Heaven, I have married a man who is not jealous of my underſtanding. 'I ſhould have been the moſt miſerable woman upon 'earth with a ſtarched pedant, who was poſſeſſed of 'that nonſenſical opinion, that the difference of ſexes 'cauſes any difference in the mind. Why do not you 'honeſtly avow the Turkiſh notion, that women have 'no ſouls; for you ſay the ſame thing in effect?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, greatly concerned to ſee his wife ſo angry, 'you have miſtaken 'the doctor.'

'I beg, my dear,' cries ſhe, 'you will ſay nothing 'upon theſe ſubjects. I hope you, at leaſt, do not deſpiſe my underſtanding.'

'I aſſure you, I do not,' ſaid the ſerjeant; 'and I 'hope you will never deſpiſe mine; for a man may 'have ſome underſtanding, I hope, without learning.'

Mrs. Atkinſon reddened extremely at theſe words; and the doctor, fearing he had gone too far, began to ſoften matters, in which Amelia aſſiſted him. By theſe means, the ſtorm riſing in Mrs. Atkinſon before was in ſome meaſure laid, at leaſt ſuſpended from burſting at preſent; but it fell afterwards upon the poor ſerjeant's head in a torrent: who had learned, perhaps, one maxim from his trade, that a cannon-ball always doth miſchief in proportion to the reſiſtance it meets with; and that nothing ſo effectually deadens it's force as a wool-pack. The ſerjeant therefore bore all with patience; and the idea of a wool-pack, perhaps, bringing that of a feather-bed into his head, he at laſt not only quieted his wife; but ſhe cried out with great ſincerity---'Well, my dear, I will ſay one thing for you, 'that I believe, from my ſoul, though you have no

 'learning,

'learning, you have the best understanding of any man 'upon earth; and I must own I think the latter far 'more profitable of the two.'

Far different was the idea she entertained of the doctor; whom, from this day, she considered as a conceited pedant; nor could all Amelia's endeavours ever alter her sentiments.

The doctor now took his leave of Booth and his wife for a week; he intending to set out within an hour or two with his old friend, with whom our readers were a little acquainted at the latter end of the ninth book, and of whom, perhaps, they did not then conceive the most favourable opinion.

Nay, I am aware that the esteem which some readers before had for the doctor, may here be lessened; since he may appear to have been too easy a dupe to the gross flattery of the old gentleman. If there be any such critics, we are heartily sorry as well for them as for the doctor; but it is our business to discharge the part of a faithful historian, and to describe human nature as it is, not as we would wish it to be.

CHAP. V.

In which Colonel Bath appears in great Glory.

THAT afternoon, as Booth was walking in the Park, he met with Colonel Bath, who presently asked him for the letter which he had given him the night before; upon which Booth immediately returned it.

'Do not you think,' cries Bath, 'it is writ with 'great dignity of expression, and emphasis of--of-- 'of judgment?'

'I am surprized, though,' cries Booth, 'that any 'one should write such a letter to you, colonel.'

'To me!' said Bath. 'What do you mean, Sir? 'I hope you do not imagine any man durst write such 'a letter to me? D---n me, if I knew a man who 'thought me capable of debauching my friend's wife, 'I would---d---n me.'

'I believe, indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that no man

'living

'living dares put his name to such a letter: but you 'see it is anonymous.'

'I do not know what you mean by *ominous*,' cries the colonel; 'but, blast my reputation, if I had received such a letter, if I would not have searched the 'world to have found the writer. D---n me, I would 'have gone to the East Indies to have pulled off his 'nose.'

'He would, indeed, have deserved it,' cries Booth. 'But, pray, Sir, how came you by it?'

'I took it,' says the colonel, 'from a set of idle 'young rascals, one of whom was reading it out aloud 'upon a stool, while the rest were attempting to make 'a jest, not only of the letter, but of all decency, virtue, and religion. A set of fellows that you must 'have seen or heard of about town, that, that are, 'd---n me, a disgrace to the dignity of manhood; 'puppies that mistake noise and impudence, rudeness, 'and prophaneness, for wit. If the drummers of my 'company had not more understanding than twenty 'such fellows, I would have them both whipped out 'of the regiment.'

'So then you do not know the person to whom it 'was writ?' saith Booth.

'Lieutenant,' cries the colonel, 'your question deserves no answer. I ought to take time to consider 'whether I ought not to resent the supposition. Do 'you think, Sir, I am acquainted with a rascal?'

'I do not suppose, colonel,' cries Booth, 'that 'you would willingly cultivate an intimacy with such 'a person; but a man must have good luck, who hath 'any acquaintance, if there are not some rascals among 'them.'

'I am not offended with you, child,' says the colonel. 'I know you did not intend to offend me.'

'No man, I believe, dares intend it,' saith Booth.

'I believe so too,' said the colonel; d---n me, I 'know it. But you know, child, how tender I am 'on this subject. If I had been ever married myself,

 'I should

'I should have cleft the man's skull who had dared to 'look wantonly at my wife.'

'It is certainly the most cruel of all injuries,' saith Booth. 'How finely doth Shakespeare express it in his 'Othello!

'But there, where I had treasured up my soul.'

'That Shakespeare,' cries the colonel, 'was a fine 'fellow. He was a very pretty poet, indeed. Was 'it not Shakespeare that wrote the play about Hotspur? 'You must remember these lines: I got them almost 'by heart at the play-house; for I never missed that 'play whenever it was acted, if I was in town.

'By Heav'n it was an easy leap,
'To pluck bright honour into the full moon.
'Or dive into the bottomless deep.'

'And---and---faith, I have almost forgot them; but I 'know it is something about saving your honour from 'drowning. O it is very fine! I say, d---n me, the 'man that writ these lines was the greatest poet the 'world ever produced. There is dignity of expression, 'and emphasis of thinking, d---n me.'

Booth assented to the colonel's criticism, and then cried---'I wish, colonel, you would be so kind to give 'me that letter.' The colonel answered, if he had any particular use for it, he would give it to him with all his heart, and presently delivered it; and soon afterward they parted.

Several passages now struck all at once upon Booth's mind, which gave him great uneasiness. He became confident now that he had mistaken one colonel for another; and though he could not account for the letter's getting into those hands from whom Bath had taken it, (indeed James had dropt it out of his pocket) yet a thousand circumstances left him no room to doubt the identity of the person; who was a man much more liable to raise the suspicion of a husband than honest Bath, who would at any time have rather fought with a man than lain with a woman.

The whole behaviour of Amelia now rushed upon his

his memory. Her resolution not to take up her residence at the colonel's house, her backwardness even to dine there, her unwillingness to go to the masquerade, many of her unguarded expressions, and some where she had been more guarded, all joined together to raise such an idea in Mr. Booth, that he had almost taken a resolution to go and cut the colonel to pieces in his own house. Cooler thoughts, however, suggested themselves to him in time. He recollected the promise he had so solemnly made to the doctor. He considered, moreover, that he was yet in the dark as to the extent of the colonel's guilt. Having nothing, therefore, to fear from it, he contented himself to postpone a resentment, which he nevertheless resolved to take of the colonel hereafter, if he found he was in any degree a delinquent.

The first step he determined to take, was, on the first opportunity, to relate to Colonel James the means by which he became possessed of the letter, and to read it to him. On which occasion, he thought, he should easily discern, by the behaviour of the colonel, whether he had been suspected, either by Amelia or the doctor, without a cause: but as for his wife, he fully resolved not to reveal the secret to her till the doctor's return.

While Booth was deeply engaged by himself in these meditations, Captain Trent came up to him, and familiarly slapped him on the shoulder.

They were soon joined by a third gentleman, and presently afterwards by a fourth, both acquaintances of Mr. Trent; and all having walked twice the length of the Mall together, it being now past nine in the evening, Trent proposed going to the tavern: to which the strangers immediately consented; and Booth himself, after some resistance, was at length persuaded to comply.

To the King's Arms then they went, where the bottle went very briskly round till after eleven; at which time Trent proposed a game at cards: to which proposal likewise Booth's consent was obtained, though not without much difficulty; for though he had naturally some in-

clination to gaming, and had formerly a little indulged it, yet he had entirely left it off for many years.

Booth and his friend were partners, and had at first some success; but Fortune, according to her usual conduct, soon shifted about, and persecuted Booth with such malice, that in about two hours he was stripped of all the gold in his pocket, which amounted to twelve guineas, being more than half the cash which he was at that time worth.

How easy it is for a man, who is at all tainted with the itch of gaming, to leave off play in such a situation, especially when he is likewise heated with liquor, I leave to the gamesters to determine. Certain it is, that Booth had no inclination to desist; but, on the contrary, was so eagerly bent upon playing on, that he called his friend out of the room, and asked him for ten pieces, which he promised punctually to pay the next morning.

Trent chid him for using so much formality on the occasion, 'You know,' said he, 'dear Booth, you 'may have what money you please of me. Here is a 'twenty pound note at your service, and if you want 'five times the sum, it is at your service. We will 'never let these fellows go away with our money in 'this manner; for we have so much the advantage, 'that if the knowing ones were here, they would lay 'odds on our side.'

But if this was really Mr. Trent's opinion, he was very much mistaken; for the two other honourable gentlemen were not only great masters of the game, and somewhat soberer than poor Booth, having with all the art in their power evaded the bottle; but they had moreover another small advantage over their adversaries, both of them, by means of some certain private signs previously agreed upon between them, being always acquainted with the principal cards in each other's hands. It cannot be wondered, therefore, that Fortune was on their side; for however she may be reported to favour

fools,

fools, she never, I believe, shews them any countenance when they engage in play with knaves.

The more Booth lost, the deeper he made his bets; the consequence of which was, that about two in the morning, besides the loss of his own money, he was fifty pounds indebted to Trent. A sum, indeed, which he would not have borrowed, had not the other, like a very generous friend, pushed it upon him.

Trent's pockets became at last dry, by means of these loans. His own loss indeed was trifling; for the stakes of the games were no higher than crowns; and betting (as it is called) was that to which Booth owed his ruin. The gentlemen, therefore, pretty well knowing Booth's circumstances, and being kindly unwilling to win more of a man than he was worth, declined playing any longer, nor did Booth once ask them to persist; for he was ashamed of the debt which he had already contracted to Trent, and very far from desiring to increase it.

The company then separated. The two victors and Trent went off in their chairs to their several houses near Grosvenor Square; and poor Booth, in a melancholy mood, walked home to his lodgings. He was, indeed, in such a fit of despair, that it more than once came into his head to put an end to his miserable being.

But, before we introduce him to Amelia, we must do her the justice to relate the manner in which she spent this unhappy evening. It was about seven when Booth left her to walk in the Park: from this time, till past eight, she was employed with her children, in playing with them, in giving them their supper, and in putting them to bed.

When these offices were performed, she employed herself another hour in cooking up a little supper for her husband, this being, as we have already observed, his favourite meal, as indeed it was her's; and, in a most pleasant and delightful manner, they generally passed their time at this season, though their fare was very seldom of the sumptuous kind.

It

It now grew dark, and her hashed mutton was ready for the table; but no Booth appeared. Having waited therefore for him a full hour, she gave him over for that evening; nor was she much alarmed at his absence, as she knew he was, in a night or two, to be at the tavern with some brother officers: she concluded therefore that they had met in the Park, and had agreed to spend this evening together.

At ten then she sat down to supper by herself; for Mrs. Atkinson was then abroad. And here we cannot help relating a little incident, however trivial it may appear to some. Having sat some time alone reflecting on their distressed situation, her spirits grew very low; and she was once or twice going to ring the bell, to send her maid for half a pint of white-wine; but checked her inclination, in order to save the little sum of six-pence; which she did the more resolutely, as she had before refused to gratify her children with tarts for their supper, from the said motive. And this self-denial she was very probably practising to save six-pence; while her husband was paying a debt of several guineas, incurred by the ace of trumps being in the hands of his adversary.

Instead, therefore, of this cordial, she took up one of the excellent Farquhar's comedies, and read it half through, when the clock striking twelve, she retired to bed, leaving the maid to sit up for her master. She would, indeed, have much more willingly sat up herself; but the delicacy of her own mind assured her, that Booth would not thank her for the compliment. This is, indeed, a method which some wives take of upbraiding their husbands for staying abroad till too late an hour, and of engaging them through tenderness and good-nature, never to enjoy the company of their friends too long, when they must do this at the expence of their wives rest.

To bed then she went, but not to sleep. Thrice, indeed, she told the dismal clock, and as often heard the more dismal watchmen, till her miserable husband found

found his way home, and stole silently, like a thief, to bed to her; at which time pretending then first to wake, she threw her snowy arms around him; though, perhaps, the more witty property of snow, according to Addison, that is to say, it's coldness, rather belonged to the poor captain.

CHAP. VI.

Read, Gamester, and observe.

BOOTH could not so well disguise the agitations of his mind from Amelia, but that she perceived sufficient symptoms to assure her that some misfortune had befallen him. This made her in her turn so uneasy, that Booth took notice of it, and after breakfast said---'Sure, my dear Emily, something hath fallen out to 'vex you.'

Amelia, looking tenderly at him, answered---'Indeed, my dear, you are in the right; I am indeed, 'extremely vexed.'---'For Heaven's sake,' said he, 'what is it?' 'Nay, my love,' cries she, 'that you 'must answer yourself. Whatever it is that hath 'given you all that disturbance that you in vain endea-'vour to conceal from me, this it is which causes all 'my affliction.'

'You guess truly, my sweet,' replied Booth; 'I am 'indeed afflicted, and I will not, nay, I cannot, conceal 'the truth from you; I have undone myself, Amelia.'

'What have you done, child?' said she, in some consternation; 'pray, tell me.'

'I have lost my money at play,' answered he.

'Pugh!' said she, recovering herself; 'what signi-'fies the trifle you had in your pocket? Resolve never 'to play again, and let it give you no farther vexation; 'I warrant you, we will contrive some method to re-'pair such a loss.'

'Thou heavenly angel! thou comforter of my soul!' cries Booth, tenderly embracing her. Then starting a little from her arms, and looking with eager fondness in her eyes, he said---'Let me survey thee; art thou 'really human, or art thou not rather an angel in a hu-

'man

'man form? O, no!' cries he, flying again into her arms, 'thou art my dearest woman, my best, my beloved wife!'

Amelia having returned all his caresses with equal kindness, told him she had near eleven guineas in her purse, and asked how much she should fetch him. 'I would not advise you, Billy, to carry too much in your pocket, for fear it should be a temptation to you to return to gaming, in order to retrieve your past losses. Let me beg you, on all accounts, never to think more, if possible, on the trifle you have lost, any more than if you had never possessed it.'

Booth promised her faithfully he never would, and refused to take any of the money. He then hesitated a moment, and cried---'You say, my dear, you have eleven guineas; you have a diamond-ring likewise, which was your grandmother's, I believe that is worth twenty pounds; and your own and the child's watch are worth as much more.'

'I believe they would sell for as much,' cried Amelia; 'for a pawnbroker of Mrs. Atkinson's acquaintance offered to lend me thirty five pounds upon them, when you was in your last distress. But why are you computing their value now?'

'I was only considering,' answered he, 'how much we could raise in any case of exigency.'

'I have computed it myself,' said she; 'and I believe all we have in the world, besides our bare necessary apparel, would produce about fifty pounds: and suppose, my dear,' said she, 'while we have that little sum we should think of employing it some way or other to procure some small subsistence for ourselves and our family. As for your dependance on the colonel's friendship, it is all vain I am afraid, and fallacious. Nor do I see any hopes you have, from any other quarter, of providing for yourself again in the army. And though the sum which is now in our power is very small, yet we may possibly contrive with it to put ourselves into some mean way of

'of livelihood. I have a heart, my Billy, which is capable of undergoing any thing for your ſake; and I hope my hands are as able to work as thoſe which have been more inured to it. But think, my dear, think what muſt be our wretched condition, when the very little we now have, is all mouldered away, as it will ſoon be in this town.'

When poor Booth heard this, and reflected that the time which Amelia foreſaw was already arrived, (for that he had already loſt every farthing they were worth) it touched him to the quick; he turned pale, gnaſhed his teeth, and cried out---'Damnation! this is too much to bear!'

Amelia was thrown into the utmoſt conſternation by this behaviour; and, with great terror in her countenance, cried out---'Good heavens! my dear love, what is the reaſon of this agony?'

'Aſk me no queſtions,' cried he, unleſs you would drive me to madneſs.'

'My Billy, my love,' ſaid ſhe, 'what can be the meaning of this? I beg you will deal openly with me, and tell me all your griefs.'

'Have you dealt fairly with me, Amelia?' ſaid he.

'Yes, ſurely,' ſaid ſhe; 'Heaven is my witneſs how fairly!'

'Nay, do not call Heaven,' cried he, 'to witneſs a falſhood. You have not dealt openly with me, Amelia. You have concealed ſecrets from me; ſecrets which I ought to have known, and which if I had known, it had been better for us both.'

'You aſtoniſh me as much as you ſhock me,' cried ſhe. 'What falſhood, what treachery, have I been guilty of?'

'You tell me,' ſaid he, 'that I can have no reliance on James; why did you not tell me ſo before?'

'I call Heaven again,' ſaid ſhe, 'to witneſs; nay, I appeal to yourſelf for the truth of it; I have often told you ſo. I have told you I diſlike the man, notwithſtanding the many favours he hath done you. I

'deſired

'desired you not to have too absolute a reliance on 'him. I own, I had once an extreme good opinion 'of him; but I changed it, and I acquainted you 'that I had so.----'

'But not,' cries he, 'with the reasons why you 'had changed it.'

'I was really afraid, my dear,' said she, 'of going 'too far. I knew the obligations you had to him; 'and if I suspected that he acted rather from vanity 'than true friendship-----'

'Vanity!' cries he: 'take care, Amelia; you 'know his motive to be much worse than vanity. A 'motive, which, if he had piled obligations on me till 'they had reached the skies, would tumble all down to 'hell. It is in vain no conceal it longer---I know all '---your confident hath told me all.'

'Nay then,' cries she, 'on my knees I entreat you 'to be pacified, and hear me out. It was, my dear, 'for you, my dread of your jealous honour, and the 'fatal consequences.'

'Is not Amelia, then,' cried he, 'equally jealous 'of my honour! Would she, from a weak tenderness 'of my person, go privately about to betray, to under-'mine, the most invaluable treasure of my soul? 'Would she have me pointed at as the credulous dupe, 'the easy fool, the tame, the kind cuckold, of a rascal 'with whom I conversed as a friend?'

'Indeed, you injure me,' said Amelia. 'Heaven 'forbid I should have the trial; but, I think, I could 'sacrifice all I hold most dear, to preserve your honour. 'I think, I have shewn I can. But I will----when 'you are cool, I will satisfy you I have done nothing 'you ought to blame.'

'I am cool, then,' cries he; 'I will with the great-'est coolness hear you. But do not think, Amelia, I 'have the least jealousy, the least suspicion, the least 'doubt of your honour. It is your want of confidence 'in me alone which I blame.'

'When

'When you are calm,' said she, 'I will speak, and 'not before.'

He assured her he was calm; and then she said---'You have justified my conduct by your present passion, in concealing from you my suspicions, for they 'were no more; nay, it is possible they were unjust: for 'since the doctor, in betraying the secret to you, hath 'so falsified my opinion of him, why may I not be as 'well deceived in my opinion of the colonel, since it 'was only formed on some particulars in his behaviour 'which I disliked? for, upon my honour, he never 'spoke a word to me, nor hath been ever guilty of any 'direct action which I could blame.' She then went on, and related most of the circumstances which she had mentioned to the doctor, omitting one or two of the strongest, and giving such a turn to the rest, that if Booth had not had some of Othello's blood in him, his wife would have almost appeared a prude in his eyes. Even he, however, was pretty well pacified by this narrative, and said he was glad to find a possibility of the colonel's innocence; but that he greatly commended the prudence of his wife, and only wished she would for the future make him her only confident.

Amelia, upon that, expressed some bitterness against the doctor for breaking his trust; when Booth, in his excuse, related all the circumstances of the letter, and plainly convinced her that the secret had dropped by mere accident from the mouth of the doctor.

Thus the husband and wife became again reconciled; and poor Amelia generously forgave a passion, of which the sagacious reader is better acquainted with the real cause, than was that unhappy lady.

CHAP. VII.

In which Booth receives a Visit from Captain Trent.

WHEN Booth grew perfectly cool, and began to reflect that he had broken his word to the doctor, in having made the discovery to his wife, which we have seen in the last chapter, that thought gave him great uneasiness; and now to comfort him, Captain

Trent came to make him a visit. This was, indeed, almost the last man in the world whose company he wished for; for he was the only man he was ashamed to see, for a reason well known to gamesters; among whom, the most dishonourable of all things, is not to pay a debt contracted at the gaming-table, the next day, or the next time at least that you see the party.

Booth made no doubt but that Trent was come on purpose to receive this debt; the latter had been, therefore, scarce a minute in the room, before Booth began in an aukward manner, to apologize; but Trent immediately stopped his mouth, and said---'I do not want 'the money, Mr. Booth, and you may pay it me 'whenever you are able; and if you are never able, I 'assure you, I will never ask you for it.'

This generosity raised such a tempest of gratitude in Booth, (if I may be allowed the expression) that the tears burst from his eyes, and it was some time before he could find any utterance for those sentiments with which his mind overflowed; but when he began to express his thankfulness, Trent immediately stopped him, and gave a sudden turn to their discourse.

Mrs. Trent had been to visit Mrs. Booth on the masquerade evening, which visit Mrs. Booth had not yet returned. Indeed, this was only the second day since she had received it. Trent therefore now told his friend, that he should take it extremely kind, if he and his lady would wave all ceremony, and sup at their house the next evening. Booth hesitated a moment; but presently said---'I am pretty certain my wife is 'not engaged, and I will undertake for her. I am sure 'she will not refuse any thing Mr. Trent can ask.' And soon after Trent took Booth with him to walk in the Park.

There were few greater lovers of the bottle than Trent; he soon proposed, therefore, to adjourn to the King's Arms Tavern, where Booth, though much against his inclination, accompanied him. But Trent was very importunate, and Booth did not think himself

ſelf at liberty to refuſe ſuch a requeſt to a man from whom he had ſo lately received ſuch obligations.

When they came to the tavern, however, Booth recollected the omiſſion he had been guilty of the night before. He wrote a ſhort note, therefore, to his wife, acquainting her, that he ſhould not come home to ſupper; but comforted her with a faithful promiſe that he would on no account engage himſelf in gaming.

The firſt bottle paſſed in ordinary converſation; but, when they had tapped the ſecond, Booth, on ſome hints which Trent gave him, very fairly laid open to him his whole circumſtances, and declared he almoſt deſpaired of mending them. ‘My chief relief,’ ſaid he, ‘was in ‘the intereſt of Colonel James; but I have given up ‘thoſe hopes.’

‘And very wiſely too,’ ſaid Trent. ‘I ſay nothing ‘of the colonel's good-will. Very likely he may be ‘your ſincere friend; but I do not believe he hath the ‘intereſt he pretends to. He hath had too many fa‘vours in his own family, to aſk any more yet awhile. ‘But I am miſtaken if you have not a much more pow‘erful friend than the colonel; one who is both able ‘and willing to ſerve you. I dined at his table within ‘theſe two days; and I never heard kinder nor warmer ‘expreſſions from the mouth of man, than he made uſe ‘of towards you. I make no doubt you know whom ‘I mean.’

‘Upon my honour I do not,’ anſwered Booth; ‘nor ‘did I gueſs that I had ſuch a friend in the world as ‘you mention.’

‘I am glad, then,’ cries Trent, ‘that I have the ‘pleaſure of informing you of it.’ He then named the noble peer, who hath been already ſo often mentioned in this hiſtory.

Booth turned pale, and ſtarted at his name. ‘I for‘give you, my dear Trent,’ cries Booth, ‘for men‘tioning his name to me, as you are a ſtranger to what ‘hath paſſed between us.’

‘Nay, I know nothing that hath paſſed between

'you,' anſwered Trent. 'I am ſure, if there is any 'quarrel between you of two days ſtanding, all is for'given on his part.'

'D---n his forgiveneſs!' ſaid Booth. 'Perhaps I 'ought to bluſh at what I have forgiven.'

'You ſurprize me,' cries Trent. 'Pray, what 'can be the matter?'

'Indeed, my dear Trent,' cries Booth very gravely, 'he would have injured me in the tendereſt part. I 'know not how to tell it you; but he would have diſ'honoured me with my wife.'

'Sure you are not in earneſt,' anſwered Trent; 'but, if you are, you will pardon me for thinking that 'impoſſible.'

'Indeed,' cries Booth, 'I have ſo good an opinion 'of my wife, as to believe it impoſſible for him to ſuc'ceed; but that he ſhould intend me the favour, you 'will not, I believe, think an impoſſibility.'

'Faith! not in the leaſt,' ſaid Trent. 'Mrs. 'Booth is a very fine woman; and if I had the honour 'to be her huſband, I ſhould not be angry with any 'man for liking her.'

'But you would be angry,' ſaid Booth, 'with a 'man who would make uſe of ſtratagems and contri'vances to ſeduce her virtue; eſpecially if he did this 'under the colour of entertaining the higheſt friendſhip 'for yourſelf.'

'Not at all,' cries Trent. 'It is human nature.'

'Perhaps it is,' cries Booth; 'but it is human na'ture depraved, ſtripped of it's worth, and lovelineſs, 'and dignity, and degraded down to a level with the 'vileſt brutes.'

'Look ye, Booth,' cries Trent, 'I would not be 'miſunderſtood. I think, when I am talking to you, 'I talk to a man of ſenſe, and to an inhabitant of this 'country; not to one who dwells in a land of ſaints. 'If you have really ſuch an opinion as you expreſs of 'this noble lord, you have the fineſt opportunity of 'making a compleat fool and bubble of him that any

'man

'man can desire, and of making your own fortune at 'the same time. I do not say that your suspicions are 'groundless; for, of all men upon earth, I know my 'lord is the greatest bubble to women, though I be-'lieve he hath had very few. And this I am confident 'of, that he hath not the least jealousy of these suspi-'cions. Now, therefore, if you will act the part of a 'wise man, I will undertake that you shall make your 'fortune, without the least injury to the chastity of 'Mrs. Booth.'

'I do not understand you, Sir,' said Booth.

'Nay,' cries Trent, 'if you will not understand 'me, I have done. I meant only your service; and I 'thought I had known you better.'

Booth begged him to explain himself. 'If you can,' said he, 'shew me any way to improve such circum-'stances as I have opened to you, you may depend up-'on it I shall readily embrace it, and own my obliga-'tions to you.'

'That is spoken like a man,' cries Trent. 'Why, 'what is it more than this! Carry your suspicions in 'your own bosom. Let Mrs. Booth, in whose virtue 'I am sure you may be justly confident, go to the public 'places; there let her treat my lord with common civi-'lity only; I am sure he will bite. And thus, with-'out suffering him to gain his purpose, you will gain 'yours. I know several who have succeeded with 'him in this manner.'

'I am very sorry, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that you are 'acquainted with any such rascals. I do assure you, 'rather than I would act such a part, I would submit 'to the hardest sentence that Fortune could pronounce 'against me.'

'Do as you please, Sir,' said Trent; 'I have only 'ventured to advise you as a friend. But do you not 'think your nicety is a little over-scrupulous?'

'You will excuse me, Sir,' said Booth; 'but I 'think no man can be too scrupulous in points which 'concern his honour.'

'I know many men of very nice honour,' anſwered Trent, 'who have gone much farther; and no man, I 'am ſure, had ever a better excuſe for it than yourſelf. 'You will forgive me, Booth, ſince what I ſpeak pro-'ceeds from my love to you, nay, indeed, by men-'tioning your affairs to me, which I am heartily ſorry 'for, you have given me a right to ſpeak. You know 'beſt what friends you have to depend upon; but, if 'you have no other pretenſions than your merit, I can 'aſſure you you would fail, if it was poſſible you could 'have ten times more merit than you have. And if 'you love your wife, as I am convinced you do, what 'muſt be your condition in ſeeing her want the neceſ-'ſaries of life?'

'I know my condition is very hard,' cries Booth; 'but I have one comfort in it, which I will never part 'with, and that is innocence. As to the mere neceſ-'ſaries of life, however, it is pretty difficult to deprive 'us of them; this I am ſure of, no one can want them 'long.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Trent, 'I did not 'know you had been ſo great a philoſopher. But, be-'lieve me, theſe matters look much leſs terrible at a 'diſtance, than when they are actually preſent. You 'will then find, I am afraid, that honour hath no 'more ſkill in cookery, than Shakeſpear tells us it hath 'in ſurgery. D---n me, if I do not wiſh his lordſhip 'loved my wife as well as he doth yours! I promiſe 'you I would truſt her virtue; and if he ſhould get the 'better of it, I ſhould have people of faſhion enough to 'keep me in countenance.'

Their ſecond bottle being now almoſt out, Booth, without making any anſwer, called for a bill. Trent preſſed very much the drinking of another bottle; but Booth abſolutely refuſed: and preſently afterwards, they parted, not extremely well ſatisfied with each other. They appeared, indeed, one to the other, in diſadvantageous lights of a very different kind. Trent concluded Booth to be a very ſilly fellow; and Booth began to ſuſpect

suspect that Trent was very little better than a scoundrel.

CHAP. VIII.

Contains a Letter, and other Matters.

WE will now return to Amelia; to whom, immediately upon her husband's departure to walk with Mr. Trent, a porter brought the following letter; which she immediately opened and read---

'MADAM,

'THE quick dispatch which I have given to your first commands, will, I hope, assure you of the 'diligence with which I shall always obey every com- 'mand that you are pleased to honour me with. I 'have, indeed, in this trifling affair, acted as if my 'life itself had been at stake; nay, I know not but it 'may be so: for this insignificant matter, you was 'pleased to tell me, would oblige the charming person 'in whose power is not only my happiness, but, as I 'am well persuaded, my life too. Let me reap there- 'fore some little advantage in your eyes, as you have in 'mine, from this trifling occasion: for if any thing 'could add to the charms of which you are mistress, it 'would be perhaps that amiable zeal with which you 'maintain the cause of your friend. I hope, indeed, 'she will be my friend and advocate with the most 'lovely of her sex; as I think she hath reason, and as 'you was pleased to insinuate she had been. Let me 'beseech you, Madam, let not that dear heart, whose 'tenderness is so inclined to compassionate the miseries 'of others, be hardened only against the sufferings 'which itself occasions. Let not that man alone have 'reason to think you cruel, who, of all others, would 'do the most to procure your kindness. How often 'have I lived over in my reflections, in my dreams, 'those two short minutes we were together? But, 'alas! how faint are these mimicries of the imagina- 'tion! What would I not give to purchase the reality 'of such another blessing! This, Madam, is in 'your power to bestow on the man who hath no wish,

'no will, no fortune, no heart, no life, but what
'are at your diſpoſal. Grant me only the favour to be
'at Lady-----'s aſſembly. You can have nothing to
'fear from indulging me with a moment's ſight, a
'moment's converſation; I will aſk no more. I know
'your delicacy, and had rather die than offend it.
'Could I have ſeen you ſometimes, I believe the fear
'of offending you would have kept my love for ever
'buried in my own boſom; but to be totally excluded
'even from the ſight of what my ſoul doats on, is what
'I cannot bear. It is that alone which hath extorted
'the fatal ſecret from me. Let that obtain your for-
'giveneſs for me. I need not ſign this letter, otherwiſe
'than with that impreſſion of my heart which I hope
'it bears; and, to conclude it in any form, no lan-
'guage hath words of devotion ſtrong enough to tell
'you with what truth, what anguiſh, what zeal, what
'adoration, I love you.'

Amelia had juſt ſtrength to hold out to the end, when her trembling grew ſo violent, that ſhe dropped the letter, and had probably dropped herſelf, had not Mrs. Atkinſon come timely in to ſupport her.

'Good heavens!' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'What is 'the matter with you, Madam?'

'I know not what is the matter,' cries Amelia; 'but I have received a letter at laſt from that infamous 'colonel.'

'You will take my opinion again then, I hope, 'Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon. 'But do not be ſo 'affected; the letter cannot eat you, or run away with 'you. Here it lies, I ſee; will you give me leave to 'read it?'

'Read it with all my heart,' cries Amelia, 'and 'give me your advice how to act; for I am almoſt diſ-'tracted.'

'Hey-day!' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'here is a piece of 'parchment too; what is that?' In truth, this parchment had dropped from the letter when Amelia firſt opened it; but her attention was ſo fixed by the contents

contents of the letter itſelf, that ſhe had never read the other. Mrs. Atkinſon had now opened the parchment firſt; and, after a moment's peruſal, the fire flaſhed from her eyes; and the blood fluſhed into her cheeks, and ſhe cried out in a rapture---'It is a commiſſion for 'my huſband; upon my ſoul, it is a commiſſion for 'my huſband!' and at the ſame time began to jump about the room, in a kind of frantic fit of joy.

'What can be the meaning of all this?' cries Amelia, under the higheſt degree of aſtoniſhment.

'Do not I tell you, my dear Madam,' cries ſhe, 'that it is a commiſſion for my huſband; and can you 'wonder at my being overjoyed at what I know will 'make him ſo happy? And now it is all out. The 'letter is not from the colonel, but from that noble 'lord of whom I have told you ſo much. But indeed, 'Madam, I have ſome pardons to aſk of you. How-'ever, I know your goodneſs, and I will tell you all.'

'You are to know, then, Madam, that I had not 'been in the opera-houſe ſix minutes, before a maſque 'came up, and taking me by the hand, led me aſide. 'I gave the maſque my hand; and ſeeing a lady at 'that time lay hold on Captain Booth, I took that 'opportunity of ſlipping away from him: for though 'by the ſqueaking voice, and by attempting to mimic 'yours, I had pretty well diſguiſed my own, I was 'ſtill afraid, if I had much converſation with your 'huſband, he would diſcover me. I walked therefore 'away with this maſque to the upper end of the far-'theſt room, where we ſat down in a corner together. 'He preſently diſcovered to me, that he took me for 'you; and I ſoon after found out who he was: in-'deed, ſo far from attempting to diſguiſe himſelf, he 'ſpoke in his own voice, and in his own perſon. He 'now began to make violent love to me; but it was 'rather in the ſtyle of a great man of the preſent age, 'than of an Arcadian ſwain. In ſhort, he laid his 'whole fortune at my feet, and bade me make what-'ever terms I pleaſed, either for myſelf or for others.

'By

'By others, I suppose, he meant your husband. 'This, however, put a thought into my head, of 'turning the present occasion into advantage. I told 'him, there were two kinds of persons, the fallacious-'ness of whose promises had become proverbial in the 'world: these were lovers, and great men. What re-'liance then could I have on the promise of one, who 'united in himself both those characters! That I had 'seen a melancholy instance, in a very worthy woman 'of my acquaintance, (meaning myself, Madam) of 'his want of generosity. I said, I knew the obliga-'tions that he had to this woman, and the injuries he 'had done her: all which I was convinced she forgave; 'for that she had said the handsomest things in the 'world of him to me. He answered, that he thought 'he had not been deficient in generosity to this lady '(for I explained to him whom I meant;) but that in-'deed, if she had spoke well of him to me, (meaning 'yourself, Madam) he would not fail to reward her 'for such an obligation. I then told him she had mar-'ried a very deserving man, who had served long in 'the army abroad as a private man, and who was a 'serjeant in the guards; that I knew it was so very 'easy for him to get him a commission, that I should not 'think he had any honour or goodness in the world, if 'he neglected it. I declared this step must be a pre-'liminary to any good opinion he must ever hope for of 'mine. I then professed the greatest friendship to that 'lady, (in which I am convinced you will think me 'serious) and assured him he would give me one of the 'highest pleasures, in letting me be the instrument of 'doing her such a service. He promised me in a mo-'ment to do what you see, Madam, he hath since done. 'And to you I shall always think myself indebted 'for it.'

'I know not how you are indebted to me,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, I am very glad of any good for-'tune that can attend poor Atkinson; but I wish it 'had been obtained some other way. Good Heavens! 'what

'what muſt be the conſequence of this? What muſt 'this lord think of me, for liſtening to the mention of 'love; nay, for making any terms with him? for 'what muſt he ſuppoſe thoſe terms mean? Indeed, 'Mrs. Atkinſon, you carried it a great deal too far. 'No wonder he had the aſſurance to write to me in the 'manner he hath done. It is too plain what he con- 'ceives of me, and who knows what he may ſay to 'others! You may have blown up my reputation by 'your behaviour.'

'How is that poſſible?' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon. 'Is it not in my power to clear up all matters? If 'you will but give me leave to make an appointment 'in your name, I will meet him myſelf, and declare 'the whole ſecret to him.'

'I will conſent to no ſuch appointment,' cries Amelia. 'I am heartily ſorry I ever conſented to 'practiſe any deceit. I plainly ſee the truth of what 'Dr. Harriſon hath often told me, that if one ſteps 'ever ſo little out of the ways of virtue and innocence, 'we know not how we may ſlide; for all the ways of 'vice are a ſlippery deſcent.'

'That ſentiment,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'is much 'older than Dr. Harriſon. *Omne vitium in proclivi* '*eſt.*'

'However new or old it is, I find it is true,' cries Amelia. 'But pray tell me all, though I tremble to 'hear it.'

'Indeed, my dear friend,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you are terrified at nothing. Indeed, indeed, you 'are too great a prude.'

'I do not know what you mean by prudery,' an- ſwered Amelia. 'I ſhall never be aſhamed of the 'ſtricteſt regard to decency, to reputation, and to that 'honour in which the deareſt of all human creatures 'hath his ſhare. But pray give me the letter: there is 'an expreſſion in it which alarmed me when I read it. 'Pray what doth he mean by his two ſhort minutes, 'and

'and by purchasing the reality of such another blessing?'

'Indeed, I know not what he means by two minutes,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'unless he calls two hours so; for we were not together much less. And as for any blessing he had, I am a stranger to it. Sure, I hope you have a better opinion of me, than to think I granted him the last favour!'

'I do not know what favours you granted him, Madam,' answered Amelia peevishly; 'but I am sorry you granted him any in my name.'

'Upon my word,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'you use me unkindly; and it is an usage I did not expect at your hands: nor do I know that I have deserved it. I am sure I went to the masquerade with no other view than to oblige you; nor did I say or do any thing there which any woman, who is not the most confounded prude upon earth, would have started at on a much less occasion than what induced me. Well, I declare upon my soul then, that, if I was a man, rather than be married to a woman who makes such a fuss with her virtue, I would wish my wife was without such a troublesome companion.'

'Very possibly, Madam, these may be your sentiments,' cries Amelia; 'and I hope they are the sentiments of your husband.'

'I desire, Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'you would not reflect on my husband. He is a worthy man, and as brave a man as yours; yes, Madam, and he is now as much a captain.'

She spoke these words with so loud a voice, that Atkinson, who was accidentally going up stairs, heard them; and being surprized at the angry tone of his wife's voice, he entered the room, and with a look of much astonishment begged to know what was the matter.

'The matter, my dear,' cries Mrs. Atkinson, 'is, that I have got a commission for you, and your good old friend here is angry with me for getting it.'

'I have

'I have not ſpirits enough,' cries Amelia, 'to anſwer you as you deſerve; and, if I had, you are below my anger.'

'I do not know, Mrs. Booth,' anſwered the other, 'whence this great ſuperiority over me is derived; but, if your virtue gives it you, I would have you to know, Madam, that I deſpiſe a prude, as much as you can do a -----'

'Though you have ſeveral times,' cries Amelia, 'inſulted me with that word, I ſcorn to give you any ill-language in return. If you deſerve any bad appellation, you know it, without my telling it you.'

Poor Atkinſon, who was more frightened than he had ever been in his life, did all he could to procure peace. He fell upon his knees to his wife, and begged her to compoſe herſelf: for, indeed, ſhe ſeemed to be in a moſt furious rage.

While he was in this poſture, Booth, who had knocked ſo gently at the door, for fear of diſturbing his wife, that he had not been heard in the tempeſt, came in the room. The moment Amelia ſaw him, the tears, which had been gathering for ſome time, burſt in a torrent from her eyes; which, however, ſhe endeavoured to conceal with her handkerchief. The entry of Booth turned all in an inſtant into a ſilent picture; in which, the firſt figure which ſtruck the eyes of the captain, was the ſerjeant on his knees to his wife.

Booth immediately cried---'What is the meaning of this?' but received no anſwer. He then caſt his eyes towards Amelia; and plainly diſcerning her condition, he ran to her, and in a very tender phraſe begged to know what was the matter. To which ſhe anſwered---'Nothing, my dear; nothing, my dear; nothing of any conſequence.' He replied, that he would know; and then turned to Atkinſon, and aſked the ſame queſtion.

Atkinſon anſwered---'Upon my honour, Sir, I

'know nothing of it. Something hath paſſed between 'Madam and my wife; but what it is, I know no more 'than your honour.'

'Your wife,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'hath uſed me 'cruelly ill, Mr. Booth. If you muſt be ſatisfied, 'that is the whole matter.'

Booth rapped out a great oath, and cried---'It is 'impoſſible; my wife is not capable of uſing any one ill.'

Amelia then caſt herſelf upon her knees to her huſband, and cried---'For Heaven's ſake, do not throw 'yourſelf into a paſſion! Some few words have paſſed; 'perhaps I may be in the wrong.'

'Damnation ſeize me, if I think ſo!' cries Booth. 'And I wiſh whoever hath drawn theſe tears from your 'eyes, may pay it with as many drops of their heart's 'blood.'

'You ſee, Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you 'have your bully to take your part; ſo, I ſuppoſe, 'you will uſe your triumph.'

Amelia made no anſwer; but ſtill kept hold of Booth; who, in a violent rage, cried out---'My Amelia triumph over ſuch a wretch as thee! What can 'lead thy inſolence to ſuch preſumption!---Serjeant, I 'deſire you will take that monſter out of the room, or 'I cannot anſwer for myſelf.'

The ſerjeant was beginning to beg his wife to retire, (for he perceived very plainly, that ſhe had, as the phraſe is, taken a ſip too much that evening) when, with a rage little ſhort of madneſs, ſhe cried out--- 'And do you tamely ſee me inſulted in ſuch a manner, 'now that you are a gentleman and upon a footing 'with him?'

'It is lucky for us all, perhaps,' anſwered Booth, 'that he is not my equal.'

'You lye, ſirrah,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'he is 'every way your equal; he is as good a gentleman as 'yourſelf, and as much an officer. No, I retract what 'I ſay; he hath not the ſpirit of a gentleman, nor of a

'man

'man neither, or he would not bear to see his wife insulted.'

'Let me beg of you, my dear,' cries the serjeant, 'to go with me and compose yourself.'

'Go with thee, thou wretch,' cries she, looking with the utmost disdain upon him; 'no, nor ever speak to thee more.' At which words she burst out of the room: and the serjeant, without saying a word, followed her.

A very tender and pathetic scene now passed between Booth and his wife; in which, when she was a little composed, she related to him the whole story. For besides that it was not possible for her otherwise to account for the quarrel which he had seen, Booth was now possessed of the letter that lay on the floor.

Amelia having emptied her mind to her husband, and obtained his faithful promise that he would not resent the affair to my lord, was pretty well composed, and began to relent a little towards Mrs. Atkinson; but Booth was so highly incensed with her, that he declared he would leave her house the next morning; which they both accordingly did, and immediately accommodated themselves with convenient apartments within a few doors of their friend the doctor.

CHAP. IX.

Containing some Things worthy Observation.

NOTWITHSTANDING the exchange of his lodgings, Booth did not forget to send an excuse to Mr. Trent, of whose conversation he had taken a full surfeit the preceding evening.

That day, in his walks, Booth met with an old brother officer, who had served with him at Gibraltar, and was on half-pay as well as himself. He had not, indeed, had the fortune of being broke with his regiment, as was Booth; but had gone out, as they call it, on half-pay as a lieutenant, a rank to which he had risen in five and thirty years.

This honest gentleman, after some discourse with Booth, desired him to lend him half a crown; which he assured him he would faithfully pay the next day;

when he was to receive ſome money for his ſiſter. This ſiſter was the widow of an officer that had been killed in the ſea-ſervice; and ſhe and her brother lived together, on their joint ſtock, out of which, they maintained likewiſe an old mother, and two of the ſiſter's children, the eldeſt of which was about nine years old. 'You 'muſt know,' ſaid the old lieutenant, 'I have been 'diſappointed this morning by an old ſcoundrel, who 'wanted fifteen per cent. for advancing my ſiſter's 'penſion; but I have now got an honeſt fellow, who 'hath promiſed it to me to-morrow at ten per cent.'

'And enough too of all conſcience,' cries Booth.

'Why, indeed, I think ſo too,' anſwered the other, 'conſidering it is ſure to be paid one time or other. 'To ſay the truth, it is a little hard the government 'doth not pay thoſe penſions better; for my ſiſter's 'hath been due almoſt theſe two years: that is my 'way of thinking.'

Booth anſwered, he was aſhamed to refuſe him ſuch a ſum; 'But, upon my ſoul,' ſaid he, 'I have not a 'ſingle halfpenny in my pocket; for I am in a worſe 'condition, if poſſible, than yourſelf; for I have loſt 'all my money, and what is worſe, I owe Mr. Trent, 'whom you remember at Gibraltar, fifty pounds.

'Remember him! yes, d---n him, I remember him 'very well,' cries the old gentleman, 'though he will 'not remember me. He is grown ſo great now, that 'he will not ſpeak to his old acquaintance; and yet I 'ſhould be aſhamed of myſelf to be great in ſuch a 'manner.'

'What manner do you mean?' cries Booth a little eagerly.

'Why, pimping,' anſwered the other. 'He is 'pimp in ordinary to my Lord -----, who keeps his 'family; or how the devil he lives elſe I do not know, 'for his place is not worth three hundred pounds a 'year, and he and his wife ſpend a thouſand at leaſt. 'But ſhe keeps an aſſembly, which I believe if you 'was to call a bawdy-houſe, you would not miſname

'it.

'it. But, d---n me, if I had not rather be an honest 'man, and walk on foot, with holes in my shoes, as 'I do now, or go without a dinner, as I and all my 'family will to-day, than ride in a chariot, and feast 'by such means. I am honest Bob Bound, and al- 'ways will be; that is my way of thinking: and there 'is no man shall call me otherwise; for if he doth, I 'will knock him down for a lying rascal: that is my 'way of thinking.'

'And a very good way of thinking too,' cries Booth. 'However, you shall not want a dinner to- 'day; for if you will go home with me, I will lend 'you a crown with all my heart.'

'Look'e,' said the old man, 'if it be any wise in- 'convenient to you, I will not have it; for I will never 'rob another man of his dinner, to eat myself: that is 'my way of thinking.'

'Pooh,' said Booth, 'never mention such a trifle 'twice between you and me. Besides, you say you 'can pay it to me to-morrow; and I promise you that 'will be the same thing.'

They then walked together to Booth's lodgings, where Booth, from Amelia's pocket, gave his friend double the little sum he had asked. Upon which the old gentleman shook him heartily by the hand, and repeating his intention of paying him the next day, made the best of his way to a butcher's, whence he carried off a leg of mutton to a family that had lately kept Lent without any religious merit.

When he was gone, Amelia asked her husband who that old gentleman was. Booth answered, he was one of the scandals of his country. That the Duke of Marlborough had about thirty years before made him an ensign from a private man, for very particular merit; and that he had not long since gone out of the army with a broken heart upon having several boys put over his head. He then gave her an account of his family, which he had heard from the old gentleman in their way to

to his houſe, and with which we have already in a conciſe manner acquainted the reader.

'Good heavens!' cries Amelia, 'what are our 'great men made of! are they in reality a diſtinct ſpe'cies from the reſt of mankind? are they born without 'hearts?'

'One would indeed ſometimes,' cries Booth, 'be 'inclined to think ſo. In truth, they have no perfect 'ideas of thoſe common diſtreſſes of mankind which are 'far removed from their own ſphere. Compaſſion, if 'thoroughly examined, will, I believe, appear to be 'the fellow-feeling only of men of the ſame rank and 'degree of life for one another, on account of the evils 'to which they themſelves are liable. Our ſenſations 'are, I am afraid, very cold towards thoſe who are at 'a great diſtance from us, and whoſe calamities can 'conſequently never reach us.'

'I remember,' cries Amelia, 'a ſentiment of Dr. 'Harriſon's, which he told me was in ſome Latin 'book: *I am a man myſelf, and my heart is intereſted 'in whatever can befal the reſt of mankind.* That is 'the ſentiment of a good man, and whoever thinks 'otherwiſe is a bad one.'

'I have often told you, my dear Emily,' cries Booth, 'that all men, as well the beſt as the worſt, 'act alike from the principle of ſelf-love. Where be'nevolence therefore is the uppermoſt paſſion, ſelf-love 'directs you to gratify it by doing good, and by re'lieving the diſtreſſes of others; for they are then in re'ality your own. But where ambition, avarice, pride, 'or any other paſſion governs the man, and keeps his be'nevolence down, the miſeries of all other men affect 'him no more than they would a ſtock or a ſtone. 'And thus the man and his ſtatue have often the ſame 'degree of feeling or compaſſion.'

'I have often wiſhed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'to 'hear you converſe with Dr. Harriſon on this ſubject; 'for I am ſure he would convince you, though I can'not

'not, that there are really such things as religion and 'virtue.'

This was not the first hint of this kind which Amelia had given, for she sometimes apprehended from his discourse that he was little better than an atheist; a consideration which did not diminish her affection for him, but gave her great uneasiness. On all such occasions, Booth immediately turned the discourse to some other subject; for though he had in other points a great opinion of his wife's capacity, yet as a divine or a philosopher, he did not hold her in a very respectable light, nor did he lay any great stress on her sentiments in such matters. He now therefore gave a speedy turn to the conversation, and began to talk of affairs below the dignity of this history.

BOOK XI.

CHAP. I.

Containing a very polite Scene.

WE will now look back to some personages, who, though not the principal characters in this history, have yet made too considerable a figure in it to be abruptly dropped. And these are Colonel James and his lady.

This fond couple never met till dinner the day after the masquerade, when they happened to be alone together in an anti-chamber before the arrival of the rest of the company.

The conversation began with the colonel's saying---'I hope, Madam, you got no cold last night at the 'masquerade?' To which the lady answered by much 'the same kind of question.'

They then sat together near five minutes without opening their mouths to each other. At last Mrs. James said---'Pray, Sir, who was that masque with 'you in the dress of a shepherdess? How could you 'expose yourself by walking with such a trollop in 'public; for certainly no woman of any figure would

'appear

'appear there in ſuch a dreſs. You know, Mr. James, 'I never interfere with your affairs; but I would, me- 'thinks, for my own ſake, if I was you, preſerve a 'little decency in the face of the world.'

'Upon my word,' ſaid James, 'I do not know 'whom you mean. A woman in ſuch a dreſs might 'ſpeak to me for aught I know; a thouſand people 'ſpeak to me at a maſquerade. But I promiſe you I 'ſpoke to no woman acquaintance there that I know 'of. Indeed, I now recollect there was a woman in the 'dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs, and there was another auk- 'ward thing in a blue domino that plagued me a little; 'but I ſoon got rid of them.'

'And I ſuppoſe you do not know the lady in the 'blue domino neither?'---'Not I, I aſſure you,' ſaid James. 'But pray, why do you aſk me theſe queſ- 'tions? It looks ſo like jealouſy.'

'Jealouſy!' cries ſhe; 'I jealous! no, Mr. James, 'I ſhall never be jealous, I promiſe you, eſpecially of 'the lady in the blue domino; for, to my knowledge, 'ſhe deſpiſes you of all the human race.'

'I am heartily glad of it,' ſaid James; 'for I never 'ſaw ſuch a tall aukward monſter in my life.'

'That is a very cruel way of telling me you knew me.'

'You, Madam,' ſaid James; 'you was in a black 'domino.'

'It is not ſo unuſual a thing, I believe you yourſelf 'know, to change dreſſes. I own, I did it to diſcover 'ſome of your tricks. I did not think you could have 'diſtinguiſhed the tall aukward monſter ſo well.'

'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid James, 'if it was you, I did 'not even ſuſpect it; ſo you ought not to be offended at 'what I have ſaid ignorantly.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries ſhe, 'you cannot offend me by 'any thing you can ſay to my face; no, by my ſoul, 'I deſpiſe you too much. But I wiſh, Mr. James, 'you would not make me the ſubject of your converſa- 'tion amongſt your wenches. I deſire I may not be 'afraid of meeting them for fear of their inſults: that

I may not be told by a dirty trollop, you make me the
'ſubject of your wit amongſt them, of which it ſeems
'I am the favourite topic. Though you have married
'a tall aukward monſter, Mr. James, I think ſhe hath
'a right to be treated, as your wife, with reſpect at
'leaſt. Indeed, I ſhall never require any more: in-
'deed, Mr. James, I never ſhall. I think a wife hath
'a title to that.'

'Who told you this, Madam?' ſaid James.

'Your ſlut,' ſaid ſhe; 'your wench, your ſhep-
'herdeſs.'

'By all that's ſacred,' cries James, 'I do not know
'who the ſhepherdeſs was.'

'By all that's ſacred then,' ſays ſhe, 'ſhe told me
'ſo, and I am convinced ſhe told me the truth. But
'I do not wonder at your denying it; for that is
'equally conſiſtent with honour, as to behave in ſuch a
'manner to a wife who is a gentlewoman. I hope
'you will allow me that, Sir. Becauſe I had not quite
'ſo great a fortune, I hope you do not think me be-
'neath you, or that you did me any honour in marry-
'ing me. I am come of as good a family as yourſelf,
'Mr. James; and if my brother knew how you treated
'me, he would not bear it.'

'Do you threaten me with your brother, Madam?'
ſaid James.

'I will not be ill-treated, Sir,' anſwered ſhe.

'Nor I neither, Madam,' cries he; 'and therefore I
deſire you will prepare to go into the country to-mor-
'row morning.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall not.'

'By heavens, Madam, but you ſhall,' anſwered he:
'I will have my coach at the door to-morrow morning
'by ſeven; and you ſhall either go into it or be car-
'ried.'

'I hope, Sir, you are not in earneſt,' ſaid ſhe.

'Indeed, Madam,' anſwered he, 'but I am in earneſt,
'and reſolved; and into the country you go to-mor-
'row.'

'But

'But why into the country,' said she, Mr. James? 'Why will you be so barbarous to deny me the pleasure of the town?'

'Because you interfere with my pleasures,' cries James; 'which I have told you long ago I would not submit to. It is enough for fond couples to have these scenes together. I thought we had been upon a better footing, and had cared too little for each other to become mutual plagues. I thought you had been satisfied with the full liberty of doing what you please.'

'So I am; I defy you to say I have ever given you any uneasiness.'

'How,' cries he, 'have you not just now upbraided me with what you heard at the masquerade?'

'I own,' said she, 'to be insulted by such a creature to my face stung me to the soul. I must have had no spirit to bear the insults of such an animal. Nay, she spoke of you with equal contempt. Whoever she is, I promise you, Mr. Booth is her favourite. But, indeed, she is unworthy any one's regard: for she behaved like an arrant dragoon.'

'Hang her,' cries the colonel, 'I know nothing of her.'

'Well, but Mr. James, I am sure you will not send me into the country. Indeed, I will not go into the country.'

'If you was a reasonable woman,' cries James, 'perhaps I should not desire it: and, on one consideration---'

'Come, name your consideration,' said she.

'Let me first experience your discernment,' said he. 'Come, Molly, let me try your judgment. Can you guess at any woman of your acquaintance that I like?'

'Sure,' said she, 'it cannot be Mrs. Booth!'

'And why not Mrs. Booth?' answered he. 'Is she not the finest woman in the world?'

'Very far from it,' replied she, 'in my opinion.'

'Pray,

'Pray, what faults, said he, can you find in her?'

'In the firſt place,' cries Mrs. James, her eyes are 'too large; and ſhe hath a look with them that I do 'not know how to deſcribe: but I know I do not like 'it. Then her eye-brows are too large; therefore, 'indeed, ſhe doth all in her power to remedy this with 'her pincers: for if it was not for thoſe, her eye-brows 'would be prepoſterous. Then her noſe, as well pro-'portioned as it is, has a viſible ſcar on one ſide. Her 'neck likewiſe is too protuberant for the genteel ſize, 'eſpecially as ſhe laces herſelf: for no woman in my 'opinion can be genteel, who is not entirely flat before. 'And laſtly, ſhe is both too ſhort and too tall. Well, 'you may laugh, Mr. James; I know what I mean, 'though I cannot well expreſs it. I mean, that ſhe is 'too tall for a pretty woman, and too ſhort for a fine 'woman. There is ſuch a thing as a kind of inſipid 'medium, a kind of ſomething that is neither one thing 'nor another. I know not how to expreſs it more clear-'ly; but when I ſay ſuch a one is a pretty woman, a pretty 'thing, a pretty creature, you know very well I mean a 'little woman; and when I ſay ſuch a one is a very fine 'woman, a very fine perſon of a woman, to be ſure I 'muſt mean a tall woman. Now a woman that is be-'tween both, is certainly neither the one nor the other.'

'Well, I own,' ſaid he, 'you have explained your-'ſelf with great dexterity; but with all theſe imper-'fections, I cannot help liking her.'

'That you need not tell me, Mr. James,' anſwered the lady; 'for that I knew before you deſired me to 'invite her to your houſe. And nevertheleſs, did not 'I, like an obedient wife, comply with your deſires? 'did I make any objection to the party you propoſed 'for the maſquerade, though I knew very well your 'motive? what can the beſt of wives do more? To 'procure you ſucceſs is not in my power; and if I may 'give you my opinion, I believe you never will ſuc-'ceed with her.

'Is

'Is her virtue so very impregnable?' said he, with a sneer.

'Her virtue,' answered Mrs. James, 'hath the best 'guard in the world, which is a most violent love for 'her husband.'

'All pretence and affectation!' cries the colonel. 'It is impossible she should have so little taste, or, in'deed, so little delicacy, as to like such a fellow.'

'Nay, I do not much like him myself,' said she. 'He 'is not indeed at all such a sort of a man as I should 'like; but I thought he had been generally allowed to 'be handsome.'

'He handsome!' cries James; what, with a nose 'like the proboscis of an elephant, with the shoulders 'of a porter, and the legs of a chairman? The fellow 'has not in the least the look of a gentleman; and one 'would rather think he had followed the plough than 'the camp all his life.'

'Nay, now I protest,' said she, 'I think you do 'him injustice. He is genteel enough in my opinion. 'It is true, indeed, he is not quite of the most delicate 'make; but whatever he is, I am convinced she thinks 'him the finest man in the world.'

'I cannot believe it,' answered he peevishly. 'But 'will you invite her to dinner here to-morrow?'

'With all my heart, and as often as you please,' answered she. 'But I have some favours to ask of you. First, 'I must hear no more of going out of town till I please.'

'Very well,' cried he.

'In the next place,' said she, 'I must have two 'hundred guineas within these two or three days.'

'Well, I agree to that too,' answered he. 'And 'when I do go out of town, too, I go to Tunbridge, 'I insist upon that; and from Tunbridge I go to Bath '---positively to Bath. And I promise you faithfully 'I will do all in my power to carry Mrs. Booth with me.'

'On that condition,' answered he, 'I promise you, 'you shall go wherever you please. And to shew you 'I will even prevent your wishes by my generosity, as

'soon

'soon as I receive the five thousand pounds, which I 'am going to take up on one of my estates, you shall 'have two hundred more.'

She thanked him with a low curtesy; and he was in such good-humour that he offered to kiss her. To this kiss she coldly turned her cheek, and then flirting her fan, said---'Mr. James, there is one thing I forgot to 'mention to you, I think you intend to get a commis-'sion in some regiment abroad for this young man. 'Now if you would take my advice, I know this will 'not oblige his wife; and besides, I am positive she 'resolves to go with him. But if you can provide for 'him in some regiment at home, I know she will dearly 'love you for it; and when he is ordered to quarters, 'she will be left behind---and Yorkshire or Scotland, 'I think, is as good a distance as either of the Indies.'

'Well, I will do what I can,' answered James: 'but I cannot ask any thing yet; for I got two places 'of a hundred a year each for two of my footmen, 'within this fortnight.'

At this instant a violent knock at the door signified the arrival of their company; upon which, both husband and wife put on their best looks to receive their guests; and, from their behaviour to each other during the rest of the day, a stranger might have concluded he had been in company with the fondest couple in the universe.

CHAP. II.

Matters political.

BEFORE we return to Booth, we will relate a scene in which Doctor Harrison was concerned.

This good man, whilst in the country, happened to be in the neighbourhood of a nobleman of his acquaintance, and whom he knew to have very considerable interest with the ministers at that time.

The doctor, who was very well known to this nobleman, took this opportunity of paying him a visit in order to recommend poor Booth to his favour. Nor did he much doubt of his success, the favour he was to

ask being a very small one, and to which he thought the service of Booth gave him so just a title.

The doctor's name soon gained him an admission to the presence of this great man, who indeed received him with much courtesy and politeness; not so much perhaps from any particular regard to the sacred function, nor from any respect to the doctor's personal merit, as from some considerations which the reader will perhaps guess anon. After many ceremonials, and some previous discourse on different subjects, the doctor opened his business, and told the great man, that he was come to him to solicit a favour for a young gentleman who had been an officer in the army, and was now on half-pay. 'All the favour I ask, my lord,' said he, 'is, 'that this gentleman may be again admitted *ad eundem*. 'I am convinced your lordship will do me the justice to 'think I would not ask for a worthless person; but, 'indeed, the young man I mean hath very extraordi-'nary merit. He was at the siege of Gibralter, in 'which he behaved with distinguished bravery; and 'was dangerously wounded at two several times in the 'service of his country. I will add, that he is at pre-'sent in great necessity, and hath a wife and several 'children, for whom he hath no other means of pro-'viding; and if it will recommend him farther to your 'lordship's favour, his wife, I believe, is one of the 'best and worthiest of all her sex.'

'As to that, my dear doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'I shall make no doubt. Indeed, any service I shall 'do the gentleman will be upon your account. As to 'necessity it is the plea of so many, that it is impossible 'to serve them all. And with regard to the personal 'merit of these inferior officers, I believe, I need not 'tell you that it is very little regarded. But if you 'recommend him, let the person be what he will, I am 'convinced it will be done: for I know it is in your 'power at present to ask for a greater matter than this.'

'I depend entirely upon your lordship,' answered the doctor. 'Indeed,

'Indeed, my worthy friend,' replied the lord, 'I will not take a merit to myself, which will so little belong to me. You are to depend on yourself. It falls out very luckily too at this time, when you have it in your power so greatly to oblige us.'

'What, my lord, is in my power?' cries the doctor.

'You certainly know,' answered his lordship, 'how hard Colonel Trompington is run at your town, in the election of a mayor; they tell me, it will be a very near thing, unless you join us. But we know it is in your power to do the business, and turn the scale. I heard your name mentioned the other day on that account; and I know you may have any thing in reason, if you will give us your interest.'

'Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'you are not in earnest in asking my interest for the colonel?'

'Indeed I am,' answered the peer. 'Why should you doubt it?'

'For many reasons,' answered the doctor. 'First, I am an old friend and acquaintance of Mr. Fairfield, as your lordship, I believe, very well knows. The little interest, therefore, that I have, you may be assured, will go in his favour. Indeed I do not concern myself deeply in these affairs, for I do not think it becomes my cloth so to do. But as far as I think it decent to interest myself, it will certainly be on the side of Mr. Fairfield. Indeed, I should do so, if I was acquainted with both the gentlemen only by reputation; the one being a neighbouring gentleman, of a very large estate, a very sober and sensible man, of known probity and attachment to the true interest of his country: the other is a mere stranger, a boy, a soldier of fortune; and, as far as I can discern from the little conversation I have had with him, of a very shallow capacity, and no education.'

'No education, my dear friend!' cries the nobleman: 'why, he hath been educated in half the courts of Europe.'

'Perhaps so, my lord,' answered the doctor; 'but I shall always be so great a pedant as to call a man of no learning, a man of no education. And from my own knowledge, I can aver, that I am persuaded there is scarce a foot-soldier in the army more illiterate than the colonel.'

'Why as to Latin and Greek, you know,' replied the lord, 'they are not much required in the army.'

'It may be so,' said the doctor. Then let such persons keep to their own profession. It is a very low civil capacity indeed for which an illiterate man can be qualified. And to speak a plain truth, if your lordship is a friend to the colonel, you would do well to advise him to decline an attempt, in which I am certain he hath no probability of success.'

'Well, Sir,' said the lord, 'if you are resolved against us, I must deal as freely with you, and tell you plainly I cannot serve you in your affair. Nay, it will be the best thing I can do, to hold my tongue; for if I should mention his name with your recommendation, after what you have said, he would perhaps never get provided for as long as he lives.'

'Is his own merit, then, my lord, no recommendation?' cries the doctor.

'My dear, dear Sir,' cries the other, 'what is the merit of a subaltern officer!'

'Surely, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'it is the merit which should recommend him to the post of a subaltern officer. And it is a merit which will hereafter qualify him to serve his country in a higher capacity. And I do assure you of this young man, that he hath not only a good heart, but a good head too. And I have been told by those who are judges, that he is for his age an excellent officer.'

'Very probably!' cries my lord; 'and there are abundance with the same merit, and the same qualifications, who want a morsel of bread for themselves and their families.'

'It is an infamous scandal on the nation,' cries the doctor;

doctor; 'and I am heartily sorry it can be said even 'with a colour of truth.'

'How can it be otherwise?' says the peer. 'Do 'you think it is possible to provide for all men of 'merit?'

'Yes, surely do I,' said the doctor. 'And very 'easily too.'

'How, pray?' cries the lord. 'Upon my word I 'shall be glad to know.'

'Only by not providing for those who have none. 'The men of merit in any capacity are not, I am afraid, 'so extremely numerous, that we need starve any of 'them, unless we wickedly suffer a set of worthless fel-'lows to eat their bread.'

'This is all mere Utopia,' cries his lordship. 'The 'chimerical system of Plato's commonwealth, with 'which we amused ourselves at the university; politics 'which are inconsistent with the state of human affairs.'

'Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'we have read 'of states where such doctrines have been put in prac-'tice. What is your lordship's opinion of Rome in 'the earlier ages of the commonwealth, of Sparta, and 'even of Athens itself, in some periods of it's history?'

'Indeed, doctor,' cries the lord, 'all these notions 'are obsolete and long since exploded. To apply 'maxims of government drawn from the Greek and 'Roman histories, to this nation, is absurd and im-'possible. But if you will have Roman examples, 'fetch them from those times of the republic that were 'most like our own. Do you not know, doctor, that 'this is as corrupt a nation as ever existed under the 'sun? And would you think of governing such a 'people by the strict principles of honesty and mora-'lity?'

'If it be so corrupt,' said the doctor, 'I think it 'is high time to amend it. Or else it is easy to foresee 'that Roman and British liberty will have the same 'fate; for corruption in the body politic as naturally 'tends to dissolution as in the natural body.'

'I thank you for your simile,' cries my lord: 'for, in the natural body, I believe you will allow there is the season of youth, the season of manhood, and the season of old age; and that, when the last of these arrives, it will be an impossible attempt by all the means of art to restore the body again to it's youth, or to the vigour of it's middle age. The same periods happen to every great kingdom. In it's youth, it rises by arts and arms to power and prosperity. This it enjoys and flourishes with a while; and then it may be said to be in the vigour of it's age, enriched at home with all the emoluments and blessings of peace, and formidable abroad with all the terrors of war. At length, this very prosperity introduces corruption; and then comes on it's old age. Virtue and learning, art and industry, decay by degrees. The people sink into sloth and luxury, and prostitution. It is enervated at home, becomes contemptible abroad; and such indeed is it's misery and wretchedness, that it resembles a man in the last decrepit stage of life, who looks with unconcern at his approaching dissolution.'

'This is a melancholy picture indeed,' cries the doctor; 'and if the latter part of it can be applied to our case, I see nothing but religion, which would have prevented this decrepit state of the constitution, should prevent a man of spirit from hanging himself out of the way of so wretched a contemplation.'

'Why so?' said the peer. 'Why, hang myself, doctor? would it not be wiser, think you, to make the best of your time, and the most you can, in such a nation?'

'And is religion then to be really laid out of the question?' cries the doctor.

'If I am to speak my own opinion, Sir,' answered the peer, 'you know I shall answer in the negative. But you are too well acquainted with the world to be told, that the conduct of politicians is not formed upon the principles of religion.'

'I am

'I am very sorry for it,' cries the doctor; 'but I will talk to them then of honour and honesty: this is a language which I hope they will at least pretend to understand. Now to deny a man the preferment which he merits, and to give it to another man who doth not merit it, is a manifest act of injustice; and is consequently inconsistent with both honour and honesty. Nor is it only an act of injustice to the man himself, but to the public, for whose good principally all public offices are, or ought to be, instituted. Now this good can never be compleated, nor obtained, but by employing all persons according to their capacities. Wherever true merit is liable to be superseded by favour and partiality, and men are entrusted with offices, without any regard to capacity or integrity, the affairs of that state will always be in a deplorable situation. Such, as Livy tells us, was the state of Capua, a little before it's final destruction; and the consequence your lordship well knows. But, my lord, there is another mischief which attends this kind of injustice; and that is, it hath a manifest tendency to destroy all virtue and all ability among the people, by taking away all that encouragement and incentive, which should promote emulation, and raise men to aim at excelling in any art, science, or profession. Nor can any thing, my lord, contribute more to render a nation contemptible among it's neighbours; for what opinion can other countries have of the councils, or what terror can they conceive of the arms, of such a people? and it was chiefly owing to the avoiding of this error, that Oliver Cromwell carried the reputation of England higher than it ever was at any other time. I will add only one argument more, and that is founded on the most narrow selfish system of politics; and this is, that such a conduct is sure to create universal discontent and grumbling at home: for nothing can bring men to rest satisfied, when they see others preferred to them, but an opinion that they deserve that elevation; for,

'as

'as one of the greatest men this kingdom ever produced, 'observes---

'One worthless man that gains what he pretends,
'Disgusts a thousand unpretending friends.

'With what heart-burnings then must any nation see 'themselves obliged to contribute to the support of a 'set of men, of whose incapacity to serve them they 'are well apprized, and who do their country a double 'diskindness; by being themselves employed in posts 'to which they are unequal, and by keeping others out 'of those employments for which they are qualified!'

'And do you really think, doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'that any minister could support himself in this 'country upon such principles as you recommend? 'Do you think he would be able to baffle an opposi-'tion, unless he should oblige his friends, by confer-'ring places often contrary to his own inclinations and 'his own opinion?'

'Yes, really do I,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, if a 'minister is resolved to make good his confession in the li-'turgy, *by leaving undone all those things which he ought to* '*have done, and by doing all those things which he ought* '*not to have done*; such a minister, I grant, will be obli-'ged to baffle oppposition, as you are pleased to term it, 'by these arts; for, as Shakespeare some where says--

'Things ill begun, strengthen themselves by ill.

'But if, on the contrary, he will please to consider the 'true interest of his country, and that only in great 'and national points; if he will engage his country 'in neither alliances or quarrels, but where it is really 'interested; if he will raise no money but what is 'wanted; nor employ any civil or military officers but 'what are useful; and place in these employments men 'of the highest integrity, and of the greatest abilities; 'if he will employ some few of his hours to advance 'our trade, and some few more to regulate our domestic 'government; if he would do this, my lord, I will 'answer for it, he shall either have no opposition to baffle, 'or he shall baffle it by a fair appeal to his conduct.

'Such

'Such a minister may, in the language of the law, put 'himself on his country when he pleases, and he shall 'come off with honour and applause.'

'And do you really believe, doctor,' cries the peer, 'there ever was such a minister, or ever will be?'

'Why not, my lord?' answered the doctor. 'It 'requires no very extraordinary parts, nor any extra-'ordinary degree of virtue. He need practise no great 'instances of self-denial. He shall have power, and 'honour, and riches, and perhaps, all in a much 'greater degree than he can ever acquire by pursuing 'a contrary system. He shall have more of each, and 'much more of safety.'

'Pray, doctor,' said my lord, 'let me ask you one 'simple question. Do you really believe any man upon 'earth was ever a rogue out of choice?'

'Really my lord,' says the doctor, 'I am ashamed 'to answer in the affirmative; and yet, I am afraid, 'experience would almost justify me, if I should. Per-'haps the opinion of the world may sometimes mis-'lead men to think those measures necessary, which in 'reality are not so. Or the truth may be, that a man 'of good inclinations finds his office filled with such 'corruption by the iniquity of his predecessors, that 'he may despair of being capable of purging it; and so 'sits down contented, as Augeas did with the filth of 'his stables, not because he thought them the better, 'or that such filth was really necessary to a stable, but 'that he despaired of sufficient force to cleanse them.'

'I will ask you one question more, and I have done,' said the nobleman. 'Do you imagine that, if any 'minister was really as good as you would have him, 'the people in general would believe that he was so?'

'Truly, my lord,' said the doctor, 'I think they 'may be justified in not believing too hastily. But I 'beg leave to answer your lordship's question by ano-'ther. Doth your lordship believe that the people of 'Greenland, when they see the light of the sun, and

'feel

'feel his warmth, after so long a season of cold and dark-
'ness, will really be persuaded that it shines upon them?'

My lord smiled at the conceit: and then the doctor took an opportunity to renew his suit; to which his lordship answered he would promise nothing, and could give him no hopes of success. 'But you may be assured,' said he, with a leering countenance, 'I shall do him all the service in my power.' A language which the doctor well understood, and soon after took a civil, but not a very ceremonious leave.

CHAP. III.

The History of Mr. Trent.

WE will now return to Mr. Booth and his wife. The former had spent his time very uneasily, ever since he had discovered what sort of a man he was indebted to; but lest he should forget it, Mr. Trent now thought proper to remind him, in the following letter, which he received the next morning after he had put off the appointment.

'SIR,

'I AM sorry the necessity of my affairs obliges me to 'mention that small sum which I had the honour to 'lend you the other night at play; and which I shall 'be much obliged to you, if you will let me have some 'time either to-day or to-morrow. I am, Sir, your 'most obedient, most humble servant,

'GEORGE TRENT.'

This letter a little surprized Booth, after the genteel, and indeed, as it appeared, generous behaviour of Trent. But lest it should have the same effect upon the reader, we will now proceed to account for this, as well as for some other phænomena that have appeared in this history; and which, perhaps, we shall be forgiven for not having opened more largely before.

Mr. Trent, then, was a gentleman, possibly of a good family; for it was not certain whence he sprung on the father's side. His mother, who was the only parent he ever knew or heard of, was a single gentle-

woman,

woman, and for some time carried on the trade of a milliner in Covent Garden. She sent her son, at the age of eight years old, to a charity-school, where he remained till he was of the age of fourteen, without making any great proficiency in learning. Indeed, it is not very probable he should; for the master, who, in preference to a very learned and proper man, was chosen by a party into this school, the salary of which was upwards of a hundred pounds a year, had himself never travelled through the Latin grammar, and was in truth a most consummate blockhead.

At the age of fifteen, Mr. Trent was put clerk to an attorney, where he remained a very short time before he took leave of his master---rather, indeed, departed without taking leave,--and having broke open his mother's escritore, and carried off with him all the valuable effects he there found, to the amount of about fifty pounds, he marched off to sea, and went on board a merchant-man, whence he was afterwards pressed into a man of war.

In this service he continued about three years; during which time, he behaved so ill in his moral character, that he twice underwent a very severe discipline for thefts in which he was detected; but, at the same time, he behaved so well as a sailor in an engagement with some pirates, that he wiped off all former scores, and greatly recommended himself to his captain.

At his return home, being then about twenty years of age, he found that the attorney had in his absence married his mother, had buried her, and secured all her effects, to the amount, as he was informed, of about fifteen hundred pounds. Trent applied to his step-father, but to no purpose; the attorney utterly disowned him, nor would he suffer him to come a second time within his doors.

It happened that the attorney had, by a former wife, an only daughter, a great favourite, who was about the same age with Trent himself, and had, during his residence at her father's house, taken a very great liking

to

to this young fellow, who was extremely handſome, and perfectly well made. This her liking was not, during his abſence, ſo far extinguiſhed, but that it immediately revived on his return. Of this, ſhe took care to give Mr. Trent proper intimation; for ſhe was not one of thoſe backward and delicate ladies, who can die rather than make the firſt overture. Trent was overjoyed at this, and with reaſon; for ſhe was a very lovely girl in her perſon, the only child of a rich father; and the proſpect of ſo compleat a revenge on the attorney, charmed him above all the reſt. To be as ſhort in the matter as the parties, a marriage was ſoon conſummated between them.

The attorney at firſt raged and was implacable; but at laſt, fondneſs for his daughter ſo far overcame reſentment, that he advanced a ſum of money to buy his ſon-in-law (for now he acknowledged him as ſuch) an enſign's commiſſion in a marching regiment then ordered to Gibralter; at which place, the attorney heartily hoped that Trent might be knocked on the head: for in that caſe he thought he might marry his daughter more agreeably to his own ambition, and to her advantage.

The regiment into which Trent purchaſed, was the ſame with that in which Booth likewiſe ſerved; the one being an enſign, and the other a lieutenant, in the two additional companies.

Trent had no blemiſh in his military capacity. Though he had had but an indifferent education, he was naturally ſenſible and genteel; and nature, as we have ſaid, had given him a very agreeable perſon. He was likewiſe a very bold fellow; and as he really behaved himſelf every way well enough while he was at Gibralter, there was ſome degree of intimacy between him and Booth.

When the ſiege was over, and the additional companies were again reduced, Trent returned to his wife; who received him with great joy and affection. Soon after this an accident happened, which proved the utter

ter ruin of his father-in-law, and ended in breaking his heart. This was nothing but making a miſtake, pretty common at this day, of writing another man's name to a deed inſtead of his own. In truth, this matter was no leſs than what the law calls forgery. and was juſt then made capital by an act of parliament. From this offence, indeed, the attorney was acquited by not admitting the proof of the party, who was to avoid his own deed by his evidence, and therefore no witneſs, according to thoſe excellent rules, called the law of evidence; a law very excellently calculated for the preſervation of the lives of his majeſty's roguiſh ſubjects, and moſt notably uſed for that purpoſe.

But though by common law the attorney was honourably acquitted, yet as common ſenſe manifeſted to every one that he was guilty, he unhappily loſt his reputation, and of conſequence his buſineſs; the chagrin of which latter ſoon put an end to his life.

The proſecution had been attended with a very great expence; for, beſides the ordinary coſts of avoiding the gallows by the help of the law, there was a very high article of no leſs than a thouſand pounds paid down to remove out of the way a witneſs againſt whom there was no legal exception. The poor gentleman had beſides ſuffered ſome loſſes in buſineſs; ſo that, to the ſurprize of all his acquaintance, when his debts were paid, there remained no more than a ſmall eſtate of fourſcore pounds a year, which he ſettled upon his daughter, far out of the reach of her huſband, and about two hundred pounds in money.

The old gentleman had not long been in his grave, before Trent ſet himſelf to conſider ſeriouſly of the ſtate of his affairs. He had lately began to look on his wife with a much leſs degree of liking and deſire than formerly; for he was one of thoſe who think too much of one thing is good for nothing. Indeed he had indulged theſe ſpeculations ſo far, that, I believe, his wife, though one of the pretteſt women in town, was

the last subject that he would have chose for an amorous dalliance.

Many other persons, however, greatly differed from him in this opinion. Amongst the rest, was the illustrious peer of amorous memory. This noble peer having therefore got a view of Mrs. Trent one day in the street, did, by means of an emissary then with him, make himself acquainted with her lodging, to which he immediately laid siege in form, setting himself down in a lodging directly opposite to her, from whence the battery of ogles began to play the very next morning.

This siege had not continued long, before the governor of the garrison became sufficiently apprized of all the works which were carrying on; and having well reconnoitred the enemy, and discovered who he was, notwithstanding a false name and some disguise of his person, he called a council of war within his own breast. In fact, to drop all allegory, he began to consider whether his wife was not really a more valuable possession than he had lately thought her. In short, as he had been disappointed in her fortune, he now conceived some hopes of turning her beauty into a fortune.

Without communicating these views to her, he soon scraped an acquaintance with his opposite neighbour by the name which he there usurped, and counterfeited an entire ignorance of his real name and title. On this occasion, Trent had his disguise likewise, for he affected the utmost simplicity; of which affectation, as he was a very artful fellow, he was extremely capable.

The peer fell plumb into this snare; and when, by the simplicity, as he imagined, of the husband, he became acquainted with the wife, he was so extravagantly charmed with her person, that he resolved, whatever was the cost or the consequence, he would possess her.

His lordship, however, preserved some caution in his management of this affair; more, perhaps, than was necessary. As for the husband, none was requisite, for he knew all he could; and with regard to the wife herself, as she had, for some time, perceived the

decrease

decreafe of her hufband's affection, (for few women are, I believe, to be impofed upon in that matter) fhe was not difpleafed to find the return of all that complaifance and endearment, of thofe looks and languifhments, from another agreeable perfon, which fhe had formerly received from Trent, and which fhe now found fhe fhould receive from him no longer.

My lord, therefore, having been indulged with as much opportunity as he could wifh from Trent, and having received rather more encouragement than he could well have hoped from the lady, began to prepare all matters for a ftorm; when luckily Mr. Trent declaring he muft go out of town for two days, he fixed on the firft day of his departure as the time of carrying his defign into execution.

And now, after fome debate with himfelf in what manner he fhould approach his love, he at laft determined to do it in his own perfon; for he conceived, and perhaps very rightly, that the lady, like Semele, was not void of ambition, and would have preferred Jupiter in all his glory to the fame deity in the difguife of a humble fhepherd. He dreffed himfelf, therefore, in the richeft embroidery of which he was mafter, and appeared before his miftrefs arrayed in all the brightnefs of peerage. A fight whofe charms fhe had not the power to refift, and the confequences are only to be imagined. In fhort, the fame fcene which Jupiter acted with the above-mentioned miftrefs of old, was more than beginning, when Trent burft from the clofet into which he had conveyed himfelf, and unkindly interrupted the action.

His lordfhip prefently run to his fword; but Trent, with great calmnefs, anfwered, that as it was very well known he durft fight, he fhould not draw his fword on this occafion---' For fure,' fays he, ' my lord, it would ' be the higheft imprudence in me to kill a man who is ' now become fo confiderably my debtor.' At which words, he fetched a perfon from the clofet, who had

 been

been confined with him, telling him he had done his business, and might now, if he pleased, retire.

It would be tedious here to amuse the reader with all that passed on the present occasion; the rage and confusion of the wife, or the perplexity in which my lord was involved. We will omit therefore all such matters, and proceed directly to business, as Trent and his lordship did soon after. And in the conclusion, my lord stipulated to pay a good round sum, and to provide Mr. Trent with a good place on the first opportunity.

On the side of Mr. Trent were stipulated absolute remission of all past, and full indulgence for the time to come.

Trent now immediately took a house at the polite end of the town, furnished it elegantly, and set up his equipage, rigged out both himself and his wife with very handsome cloaths, frequented all public places where he could get admission, pushed himself into acquaintance: and his wife soon afterwards began to keep an assembly, or in the fashionable phrase, to be at home once a week; when, by my lord's assistance, she was presently visited by most men of the first rank, and by all such women of fashion as are not very nice in their company.

My lord's amour with this lady lasted not long; for, as we have before observed, he was the most inconstant of all the human race. Mrs. Trent's passion was not however, of that kind which leads to any very deep resentment of such fickleness. Her passion, indeed, was principally founded upon interest; so that foundation served to support another superstructure: and she was easily prevailed upon, as well as her husband, to be useful to my lord in a capacity which, though very often exerted in the polite world, hath not, as yet, to my great surprize, acquired any polite name, or, indeed, any which is not too coarse to be admitted in this history.

After this preface, which we thought necessary to account for a character of which some of my country and

collegiate readers might possibly doubt the existence, I shall proceed to what more immediately regards Mrs. Booth. The reader may be pleased to remember that Mr. Trent was present at the assembly to which Booth and his wife were carried by Mrs. James, and where Amelia was met by the noble peer.

His lordship, seeing there that Booth and Trent were old acquaintance, failed not, to use the language of sportsmen, to put Trent on upon the scent of Amelia. For this purpose, that gentleman visited Booth the very next day, and had pursued him close ever since. By his means, therefore, my lord learned that Amelia was to be at the masquerade, to which place she was dogged by Trent in a sailor's jacket; who meeting my lord, according to agreement, at the entrance of the opera-house, like the four-legged gentlemen of the same vocation, made a dead point, as it is called, at the game.

My lord was so satisfied and delighted with his conversation at the masquerade with the supposed Amelia, and the encouragement which in reality she had given him, that, when he saw Trent the next morning, he embraced him with great fondness, gave him a Bank-note of a hundred pounds, and promised him both the Indies on his success, of which he began now to have no manner of doubt.

The affair that happened at the gaming-table was likewise a scheme of Trent's, on a hint given by my lord to him, to endeavour to lead Booth into some scrape or distress, his lordship promising to pay whatever expence Trent might be led into by such means. Upon his lordship's credit, therefore, the money lent to Booth was really advanced: and hence arose all that seeming generosity, and indifference as to the payment; Trent being satisfied with the obligation conferred on Booth, by means of which he hoped to effect his purpose.

But now the scene was totally changed; for Mrs. Atkinson, the morning after the quarrel, beginning seriously to recollect that she had carried the matter rather

ther too far, and might really injure Amelia's reputation---a thought to which the warm purſuit of her own intereſt had a good deal blinded her at the time---reſolved to viſit my lord himſelf, and to let him know the whole ſtory; for as ſhe had ſucceeded already in her favourite point, ſhe thought ſhe had no reaſon to fear any conſequence of the diſcovery. This reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

Trent came to attend his lordſhip juſt after Mrs. Atkinſon had left him. He found the peer in a very ill humour, and brought no news to comfort or recruit his ſpirits; for he had himſelf juſt received a billet from Booth, with an excuſe for himſelf and his wife, from accepting the invitation at Trent's houſe that evening, where matters had been previouſly concerted for their entertainment; and when his lordſhip was by accident to drop into the room where Amelia was, while Booth was to be engaged at play in another.

And now, after much debate, and after Trent had acquainted my lord with the wretched ſituation of Booth's circumſtances, it was reſolved that Trent ſhould immediately demand his money of Booth; and, upon his not paying it---for they both concluded it impoſſible he ſhould pay it---to put the note which Trent had for the money in ſuit againſt him, by the genteel means of paying it away to a nominal third perſon; and this they both conceived muſt end immediately in the ruin of Booth, and conſequently in the conqueſt of Amelia.

In this project, and with this hope, both my lord and his ſetter, or (if the ſportſmen ſo pleaſe) ſetting-dog, greatly exulted; and it was next morning executed, as we have already ſeen.

CHAP. IV.

Containing ſome Diſtreſs.

TRENT's letter drove Booth almoſt to madneſs. To be indebted to ſuch a fellow, at any rate, had ſtuck much in his ſtomach and had given him very great uneaſineſs; but to anſwer this demand in any other

manner

manner than by paying the money was abſolutely what he could not bear. Again, to pay this money, he very plainly ſaw there was but one way; and this was by ſtripping his wife not only of every farthing, but almoſt of every rag ſhe had in the world: a thought ſo dreadful, that it chilled his very ſoul with horror; and yet pride, at laſt, ſeemed to repreſent this as the leſſer evil of the two.

But how to do this was ſtill a queſtion. It was not ſure, at leaſt he feared it was not, that Amelia herſelf would readily conſent to this; and, ſo far from perſuading her to ſuch a meaſure, he could not bear even to propoſe it. At length, his determination was, to acquaint his wife with the whole affair, and to aſk her conſent by way of aſking her advice; for he was well aſſured ſhe could find no other means of extricating him out of his dilemma. This he accordingly did, repreſenting the affair as bad as he could; though, indeed, it was impoſſible for him to aggravate the real truth.

Amelia heard him patiently, without once interrupting him. When he had finiſhed, ſhe remained ſilent ſome time; indeed, the ſhock ſhe received from this ſtory almoſt deprived her of the power of ſpeaking. At laſt ſhe anſwered---'Well, my dear, you aſk my 'advice; I certainly can give you no other than that 'the money muſt be paid.'

'But how muſt it be paid?' cries he. 'Oh, Hea-'vens! thou ſweeteſt creature! what, not once up-'braid me for bringing this ruin on thee!'

'Upbraid you, my dear!' ſays ſhe: 'would to Hea-'ven I could prevent your upbraiding yourſelf. But 'do not deſpair: I will endeavour by ſome means or 'other to get you the money.'

'Alas! my dear love,' cries Booth, 'I know the 'only way by which you can raiſe it. How can I 'conſent to that? Do you forget the fears you ſo lately 'expreſſed of what would be our wretched condition, 'when our little all was mouldered away? Oh, my 'Amelia! they cut my very heart-ſtrings, when you

'ſpoke

'spoke them; for I had then lost this little all. Indeed, I assure you, I have not played since, nor ever will more.'

'Keep that resolution,' said she, 'my dear, and I hope we shall yet recover the past!' At which words, casting her eyes on the children, the tears burst from her eyes, and she cried---'Heaven will, I hope, provide for us!'

A pathetic scene now ensued between the husband and wife, which would not perhaps please many readers to see drawn at too full a length. It is sufficient to say, that this excellent woman not only used her utmost endeavours to stifle and conceal her own concern, but said and did every thing in her power to allay that of her husband.

Booth was at this time to meet a person whom we have formerly mentioned in the course of our history. This gentleman had a place in the War Office, and pretended to be a man of great interest and consequence; by which means he did not only receive great respect and court from the inferior officers, but actually bubbled several of their money, by undertaking to do them services, which in reality were not within his power. In truth, I have known few great men who have not been beset with one or more such fellows as these, through whom the inferior part of mankind are obliged to make their court to the great men themselves; by which means, I believe, principally, persons of real merit have been often been deterred from the attempt; for these subaltern coxcombs ever assume an equal state with their masters, and look for an equal degree of respect to be paid to them; to which men of spirit, who are in every light their betters, are not easily brought to submit. These fellows, indeed, themselves have a jealous eye towards all great abilities, and are sure, to the utmost of their power, to keep all who are so endowed from the presence of their masters. They use their masters, as bad ministers have sometimes used a prince; they keep all men of merit from his ears, and daily sacrifice

crifice his true honour and intereſt to their own profit and their own vanity.

As ſoon as Booth was gone to his appointment with this man, Amelia immediately betook herſelf to her buſineſs with the higheſt reſolution. She packed up not only her own little trinkets, and thoſe of her children, but the greateſt part of her own poor cloaths, (for ſhe was but barely provided) and then drove in a hackney-coach to the ſame pawn-broker's who had before been recommended to her by Mrs. Atkinſon; who advanced her the money ſhe deſired.

Being now provided with her ſum, ſhe returned well-pleaſed home; and, her huſband coming in ſoon after, ſhe with much chearfulneſs delivered him all the money.

Booth was ſo overjoyed with the proſpect of diſcharging his debt to Trent, that he did not perfectly reflect on the diſtreſs to which his family was now reduced. The good-humour which appeared in the countenance of Amelia was perhaps another help to ſtifle thoſe reflections: but, above all, were the aſſurances he had received from the great man, whom he had met at a coffee-houſe, and who had promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; which ſeveral half-pay ſubaltern officers aſſured him was very conſiderable.

With this comfortable news he acquainted his wife; who either was, or ſeemed to be, extremely well pleaſed with it. And now he ſet out with the money in his pocket to pay his friend Trent, who, unluckily for him, happened not to be at home.

On his return home, he met his old friend the lieutenant, who thankfully paid him his crown, and inſiſted on his going with him and taking part of a bottle. This invitation was ſo eager and preſſing, that poor Booth, who could not reſiſt much importunity, complied.

While they were over this bottle, Booth acquainted his friend with the promiſes he had received that afternoon

noon at the coffee-house, with which the old gentleman was very well pleased---'For I have heard,' says he, 'that gentleman hath very powerful interest.' But he informed him likewise that he had heard that the great man must be touched; for that he never did any thing without touching. Of this, indeed, the great man himself had given some oblique hints, by saying, with great sagacity and slyness, that he knew where fifty pounds might be deposited to much advantage.

Booth answered, that he would very readily advance a small sum, if he had it in his power; but that at present, it was not so; for that he had no more in the world than the sum of fifty pounds, which he owed Trent, and which he intended to pay him the next morning.

'It is very right undoubtedly, to pay your debts,' says the old gentleman; 'but sure, on such an occasion, 'any man but the rankest usurer would be contented to 'stay a little while for his money; and it will be only 'a little while, I am convinced: for if you deposit this 'sum in the great man's hands, I make no doubt but 'you will succeed immediately in getting your commission; and then I will help you to a method of taking 'up such a sum as this.' The old gentleman persisted in this advice, and backed it with every argument he could invent; declaring, as was indeed true, that he gave the same advice which he would pursue was the case his own.

Booth long rejected the opinion of his friend; till, as they had not argued with dry lips, he became heated with wine, and then at last the old gentleman succeeded. Indeed, such was his love either for Booth, or for his own opinion, and perhaps for both, that he omitted nothing in his power. He even endeavoured to palliate the character of Trent, and unsaid half what he had before said of that gentleman. In the end, he undertook to make Trent easy, and to go to him the very next morning for that purpose.

Poor Booth at last yielded, though with the utmost difficulty. Indeed, had he known quite as much of Trent

Trent as the reader doth, no motive whatſoever would have prevailed on him to have taken the old gentleman's advice.

CHAP. V.

Containing more Wormwood, and other Ingredients.

IN the morning Booth communicated the matter to Amelia; who told him, ſhe would not preſume to adviſe him in an affair of which he was ſo much the better judge.

While Booth remained in a doubtful ſtate what conduct to purſue, Bound came to make him a viſit; and informed him, that he had been at Trent's houſe, but found him not at home; adding, that he would pay him a ſecond viſit that very day, and would not reſt till he found him.

Booth was aſhamed to confeſs his wavering reſolution in an affair in which he had been ſo troubleſome to his friend; he therefore dreſſed himſelf immediately, and together they both went to wait on the little great man, to whom Booth now hoped to pay his court in the moſt effectual manner.

Bound had been longer acquainted with the modern methods of buſineſs than Booth; he adviſed his friend therefore to begin with tipping (as it is called) the great man's ſervant. He did ſo, and by that means got ſpeedy acceſs to the maſter.

The great man received the money, not as a gudgeon doth a bait, but as a pike receives a poor gudgeon into his maw. To ſay the truth, ſuch fellows as theſe may well be likened to that voracious fiſh, who fattens himſelf by devouring all the little inhabitants of the river. As ſoon as the great man had pocketed the caſh, he ſhook Booth by the hand, and told him he would be ſure to ſlip no opportunity of ſerving him, and would ſend him word as ſoon as any offered.

Here I ſhall ſtop one moment, and ſo, perhaps, will my good-natured reader; for ſurely it muſt be a hard heart which is not affected with reflecting on the manner in which this poor little ſum was raiſed, and on the manner in which it was beſtowed! A worthy family, the

wife

wife and children of a man who had loſt his blood abroad in the ſervice of his country, parting with their little all, and expoſed to cold and hunger, to pamper ſuch a fellow as this!

And if any ſuch reader as I mention ſhould happen to be in reality a great man, and in power, perhaps the horror of this picture may induce him to put a final end to this abominable practice of touching, as it is called; by which indeed a ſet of leeches are permitted to ſuck the blood of the brave and the indigent, of the widow and the orphan!

Booth now returned home, where he found his wife with Mrs. James. Amelia had, before the arrival of her huſband, abſolutely refuſed Mrs. James's invitation to dinner the next day; but when Booth came in, the lady renewed her application, and that in ſo preſſing a manner, that Booth ſeconded her; for though he had enough of jealouſy in his temper, yet ſuch was his friendſhip to the colonel, and ſuch his gratitude for the obligations which he had received from him, that his own unwillingneſs to believe any thing of him, co-operating with Amelia's endeavours to put every thing in the faireſt light, had brought him to acquit his friend of any ill-deſign. To this, perhaps, the late affair concerning my lord had moreover contributed: for it ſeems to me that the ſame paſſion cannot much energize on two different objects at one and the ſame time: an obſervation which, I believe, will hold as true, with regard to the cruel paſſions of jealouſy and anger, as to the gentle paſſion of love, in which one great and mighty object is ſure to engage the whole paſſion.

When Booth grew importunate, Amelia anſwered— 'My dear, I ſhould not refuſe you whatever was in 'my power: but this is abſolutely out of my power; 'for, ſince I muſt declare the truth, I cannot dreſs myſelf.'

'Why ſo?' ſaid Mrs. James: 'I am ſure you are 'in good health.' 'Is

'Is there no other impediment to dreſſing but want 'of health, Madam?' anſwered Amelia.

'Upon my word, none that I know of,' replied Mrs. James.

'What do you think of want of cloaths, Madam?' ſaid Amelia.

'Ridiculous!' cries Mrs. James. 'What need 'have you to dreſs yourſelf out? You will ſee nobody 'but our own family, and I promiſe you I do not ex-'pect it. A plain night-gown will do very well.'

'But, if I muſt be plain with you, Madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'I have no other cloaths but what I have 'now on my back. I have not even a clean ſhift in 'the world---for you muſt know, my dear,' ſaid ſhe to 'Booth, that little Betty is walked off this morning, 'and hath carried all my linen with her.'

'How, my dear!' cries Booth; 'little Betty rob-'bed you!'

'It is even ſo,' anſwered Amelia. Indeed, ſhe ſpoke truth; for little Betty, having perceived the evening before that her miſtreſs was moving her goods, was willing to lend all the aſſiſtance in her power, and had accordingly moved off early that morning, taking with her whatever ſhe could lay her hands on.

Booth expreſſed himſelf with ſome paſſion on the occaſion, and ſwore he would make an example of the girl. 'If the little ſlut be above ground,' cried he, 'I will find her out, and bring her to juſtice!'

'I am really ſorry for this accident,' ſaid Mrs. James; 'and (though I know not how to mention it) 'I beg you will give me leave to offer you any linen of 'mine, till you can make new of your own.'

Amelia thanked Mrs. James, but declined the favour; ſaying, ſhe ſhould do well enough at home; and that, as ſhe had no ſervant now to take care of her children, ſhe could not, nor would not, leave them on any account.

'Then bring maſter and miſs with you,' ſaid Mrs.

James. 'You ſhall poſitively dine with us to-mor-'row.'

'I beg, Madam, you will mention it no more,' ſaid Amelia; 'for beſides the ſubſtantial reaſons I have al-'ready given, I have ſome things on my mind at pre-'ſent which make me unfit for company: and I am re-'ſolved nothing ſhall prevail on me to ſtir from home.'

Mrs. James had carried her invitation already to the very utmoſt limits of good-breeding, if not beyond them. She deſiſted therefore from going any farther; and after ſome ſhort ſtay longer took her leave, with many expreſſions of concern; which, however, great as it was, left her heart and her mouth together, before ſhe was out of the houſe.

Booth now declared that he would go in purſuit of little Betty; againſt whom he vowed ſo much vengeance, that Amelia endeavoured to moderate his anger, by repreſenting to him the girl's youth, and that this was the firſt fault ſhe had ever been guilty of. 'In-'deed,' ſays ſhe, 'I ſhould be very glad to have my 'things again, and I would have the girl too puniſhed 'in ſome degree, which might poſſibly be for her own 'good; but I tremble to think of taking away her 'life.' For Booth in his rage had ſworn he would hang her.

'I know the tenderneſs of your heart, my dear,' ſaid Booth, 'and I love you for it; but I muſt beg 'leave to diſſent from your opinion. I do not think 'the girl in any light an object of mercy. She is not 'only guilty of diſhoneſty, but of cruelty; for ſhe 'muſt know our ſituation, and the very little we had 'left. She is, beſides, guilty of ingratitude to you, 'who have treated her with ſo much kindneſs, that 'you have rather acted the part of a mother than a 'miſtreſs. And ſo far from thinking her youth an ex-'cuſe, I think it rather an aggravation. It is true, 'indeed, there are faults which the youth of the party 'very ſtrongly recommends to our pardon. Such are 'all thoſe which proceed from careleſſneſs, and want of

'thought;

'thought; but crimes of this black dye, which 'are committed with deliberation, and imply a bad 'mind, deserve a more severe punishment in a young 'person than in one of riper years: for what must the 'mind be in old age, which hath acquired such a de-'gree of perfection in villainy so very early! Such per-'sons as these it is really a charity to the public to put 'out of the society; and, indeed, a religious man 'would put them out of the world for the sake of them-'selves; for whoever understands any thing of human 'nature must know, that such people, the longer they 'live, the more they will accumulate vice and wick-'edness.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I cannot argue 'with you on these subjects. I shall always submit to 'your superior judgment, and I know you too well to 'think that you will ever do any thing cruel.'

Booth then left Amelia to the care of her children, and went in pursuit of the thief.

CHAP. VI.

A Scene of the Tragic Kind.

HE had not been long gone, before a thundering knock was heard at the door of the house where Amelia lodged, and presently after a figure all pale, ghastly, and almost breathless, rushed into the room where she then was with her children.

This figure Amelia soon recognized to be Mrs. Atkinson; though, indeed, she was so disguised, that at her first entrance Amelia scarce knew her. Her eyes were sunk in her head, her hair dishevelled, and not only her dress, but every feature in her face, was in the utmost disorder.

Amelia was greatly shocked at this sight, and the little girl was much frightened: as for the boy, he immediately knew her; and, running to Amelia, he cried---'La! mamma, what is the matter with poor 'Mrs. Atkinson?'

As soon as Mrs. Atkinson recovered her breath, she

cried out---' O Mrs. Booth, I am the most miserable 'of women! I have lost the best of husbands!'

Amelia looking at her with all the tenderness imaginable; forgetting, I believe, that there had ever been any quarrel between them; said---' Good Heavens, Madam, what is the matter?'

' O Mrs. Booth!' answered she, ' I fear I have lost 'my husband! The doctor says there is but little hope 'of his life. O Madam, however I have been in the 'wrong, I am sure you will forgive me and pity me. 'I am sure I am severely punished: for to that cursed 'affair I owe all my misery.'

' Indeed, Madam,' cries Amelia, ' I am extremely 'concerned for your misfortune. But pray tell me, 'hath any thing happened to the serjeant?'

' O Madam!' cries she, ' I have the greatest reason 'to fear I shall lose him. The doctor hath almost given 'him over. He says he hath scarce any hopes. O 'Madam! that evening that the fatal quarrel happened between us, my dear captain took it so to 'heart, that he sat up all night, and drank a whole 'bottle of brandy. Indeed, he said he wished to kill 'himself; for nothing could have hurt him so much in 'the world, he said, as to have any quarrel between 'you and me. His concern, and what he drank together, threw him into a high fever. So that, when 'I came home from my lord's---for, indeed, Madam, 'I have been and set all to rights: your reputation is 'now in no danger---when I came home, I say, I 'found the poor man in a raving delirious fit, and in 'that he hath continued ever since till about an 'hour ago, when he came perfectly to his senses; but 'now he says he is sure he shall die, and begs for 'Heaven's sake to see you first. Would you, Madam, would you have the goodness to grant my poor 'captain's desire; consider he is a dying man, and neither he nor I shall ever ask you a second favour. He 'says he hath something to say to you that he can

'man-

'mention to no other perſon, and that he cannot die 'in peace unleſs he ſees you.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'I am 'extremely concerned at what you tell me. I knew 'the poor ſerjeant from his infancy, and always had 'an affection for him, as I think him to be one of the 'beſt-natured and honeſteſt creatures upon earth. I 'am ſure, if I could do him any ſervice---but of what 'uſe can my going be?'

'Of the higheſt in the world,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon. 'If you knew how earneſtly he entreated it, 'how his poor breaking heart begged to ſee you, you 'would not refuſe.'

'Nay, I do not abſolutely refuſe,' cries Amelia. 'Something to ſay to me of conſequence, and that he 'could not die in peace unleſs he ſaid it!' 'Did he ſay 'that Mrs. Atkinſon?'

'Upon my honour he did,' anſwered ſhe; 'and much 'more than I have related.'

'Well, I will go with you,' cries Amelia. 'I 'cannot gueſs what this ſhould be; but I will go.'

Mrs. Atkinſon then poured out a thouſand bleſſings and thankſgivings; and taking hold of Amelia's hand, and eagerly kiſſing it, cried out---'How could that 'fury, Paſſion, drive me to quarrel with ſuch a crea'ture!'

Amelia told her, ſhe had forgiven and forgot it; and then, calling up the miſtreſs of the houſe, and committing to her the care of the children, ſhe cloaked herſelf up as well as ſhe could, and ſet out with Mrs. Atkinſon.

When they arrived at the houſe, Mrs. Atkinſon ſaid, ſhe would go firſt, and give the captain ſome notice; for that, if Amelia entered the room unexpectedly, the ſurprize might have an ill effect. She left, therefore, Amelia in the parlour, and proceeded directly up ſtairs.

Poor Atkinſon, weak and bad as was his condition, no ſooner heard that Amelia was come, than he diſco-

vered great joy in his countenance, and presently afterwards she was introduced to him.

Atkinson exerted his utmost strength to thank her for this goodness to a dying man, (for so he called himself.) He said, he should not have presumed to give her this trouble, had he not had something, which he thought of consequence, to say to her, and which he could not mention to any other person. He then desired his wife to give him a little box, of which he always kept the key himself, and afterwards begged her to leave the room for a few minutes; at which neither she nor Amelia expressed any dissatisfaction.

When he was alone with Amelia, he spoke as follows---'This, Madam, is the last time my eyes will 'ever behold what----Do pardon me, Madam, I never will offend you more.' Here he sunk down in his bed, and the tears gushed from his eyes.

'Why should you fear to offend me, Joe?' said Amelia. 'I am sure you never did any thing willingly to offend me.'

'No, Madam,' answered he, 'I would die a thousand times, before I would have ventured it in the smallest matter. But I cannot speak; and yet I must. You cannot pardon me; and yet, perhaps, as I am a dying man, and never shall see you more---Indeed, if I was to live after this discovery, I shall never dare to look you in the face again; and yet, Madam, to think I shall never see you more, is worse than ten thousand deaths.'

'Indeed, Mr. Atkinson,' cries Amelia, blushing, and looking down on the floor, 'I must not hear you talk in this manner. If you have any thing to say, tell it me, and do not be afraid of my anger; for I think I may promise to forgive whatever it was possible you should do.'

'Here then, Madam,' said he, 'is your picture; I stole it when I was eighteen years of age, and have kept it ever since. It is set in gold, with three little 'diamonds;

'diamonds; and yet I can truly ſay, it was not the 'gold nor the diamonds which I ſtole: it was that face, 'which, if I had been the emperor of the world------'

'I muſt not hear any more of this,' ſaid ſhe; 'comfort yourſelf, Joe, and think no more of this matter. 'Be aſſured, I freely and heartily forgive you. But 'pray compoſe yourſelf. Come, let me call in your 'wife.'

'Firſt, Madam, let me beg one favour,' cried he: 'conſider it is the laſt, and then I ſhall die in peace: 'let me kiſs that hand before I die.'

'Well, nay,' ſays ſhe, 'I do not know what I am 'doing---well---there.' She then careleſſly gave him her hand, which he put gently to his lips, and then preſently let it drop, and fell back into the bed.

Amelia now ſummoned Mrs. Atkinſon, who indeed was no farther off than juſt without the door. She then haſtened down ſtairs, and called for a great glaſs of water, which having drank off, ſhe threw herſelf into a chair; and the tears ran plentifully from her eyes with compaſſion for the poor wretch ſhe had juſt left in his bed.

To ſay the truth, without any injury to her chaſtity, that heart which had ſtood firm as a rock to all the attacks of title and equipage, of finery and flattery, and which all the treaſures of the univerſe could not have purchaſed, was yet a little ſoftened by the plain, honeſt, modeſt, involuntary, delicate, heroic paſſion, of this poor and humble ſwain; for whom, in ſpite of herſelf, ſhe felt a momentary tenderneſs and complacence, at which Booth, if he had known it, would perhaps have been diſpleaſed.

Having ſtaid ſome time in the parlour, and not finding Mrs. Atkinſon come down, (for indeed her huſband was then ſo bad ſhe could not quit him) Amelia left a meſſage with the maid of the houſe for her miſtreſs, purporting that ſhe ſhould be ready to do any thing in her power to ſerve her; and then left the houſe with a

confuſion

confusion on her mind that she had never felt before, and which any chastity that is not hewn out of marble must feel on so tender and delicate an occasion.

CHAP. VII.

In which Booth meets with more than one Adventure.

BOOTH having hunted about for two hours, at last saw a young lady, in a tattered silk gown, stepping out of a shop in Monmouth-street into a hackney-coach. This lady, notwithstanding the disguise of her dress, he presently discovered to be no other than little Betty.

He instantly gave the alarm of 'Stop thief! stop 'coach!' upon which Mrs. Betty was immediately stopped in her vehicle, and Booth and his myrmidons laid hold of her.

The girl no sooner found that she was seized by her master, than the consciousness of her guilt overpowered her; for she was not yet an experienced offender, and she immediately confessed her crime.

She was then carried before a justice of the peace, where she was searched; and there was soon found in her possession four shillings and six-pence in money, beside the silk gown, which was indeed proper furniture for Rag Fair, and scarce worth a single farthing, though the honest shopkeeper in Monmouth-street had sold it for a crown to this simple girl.

The girl being examined by the Magistrate, spoke as follows---'Indeed, Sir, an't please your worship, I am 'very sorry for what I have done; and to be sure, an't 'please your honour, my lord, it must have been the 'devil that put me upon it; for to be sure, please your 'majesty, I never thought upon such a thing in my 'life before, any more than I did of my dying day; 'but, indeed, Sir, an't please your worship---

She was running on in this manner, when the justice interrupted her, and desired her to give an account of what she had taken from her master, and what she had done with it.

'Indeed, an't please your majesty,' said she, 'I 'took

'took no more than two ſhifts of Madam's; and I 'pawned them for five ſhillings, which I gave for the 'gown that's upon my back; and as for the money in 'my pocket, it is every farthing of it my own. I am 'ſure I intended to carry back the ſhifts too, as ſoon 'as ever I could get money to take them out.'

The girl having told them where the pawnbroker lived, the juſtice ſent to him, to produce the ſhifts, which he preſently did; for he expected a warrant to ſearch his houſe would be the conſequence of his refuſal.

The ſhifts being produced, on which the honeſt pawnbroker had lent five ſhillings, appeared plainly to be worth above thirty; indeed, when new, they had coſt much more; ſo that, by their goodneſs, as well as by their ſize, it was certain they could not have belonged to the girl.

Booth grew very warm againſt the pawnbroker. 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid he to the juſtice, 'there is ſome 'puniſhment for this fellow likewiſe? who ſo plainly 'appears to have known that theſe goods were ſtolen. 'The ſhops of theſe fellows may indeed be called the 'fountains of theft; for it is in reality the encourage-'ment which they meet with from theſe receivers of 'their goods, that induces men very often to become 'thieves; ſo that theſe deſerve equal, if not ſeverer 'puniſhment than the thieves themſelves.'

The pawnbroker proteſted his innocence, and denied the taking in the ſhifts. Indeed in this he ſpoke truth; for he had ſlipped into an inner room, as was always his cuſtom on theſe occaſions, and left a little boy to do the buſineſs, by which means he had carried on the trade of receiving ſtolen goods for many years with impunity, and had been twice acquitted at the Old Bailey, though the juggle appeared upon the moſt manifeſt evidence.

As the juſtice was going to ſpeak, he was interrupted by the girl, who falling upon her knees to Booth, with many tears, begged his forgiveneſs.

'Indeed,

'Indeed, Betty,' cries Booth, 'you do not deserve 'forgiveness; for you know you had very good reasons 'why you should not have thought of robbing your 'mistress, particularly at this time. And what fur'ther aggravates your crime is, that you have 'robbed the best and kindest mistress in the world. 'Nay, you are not only guilty of felony, but of a 'felonious breach of trust; for you know very well 'every thing your mistress had was entrusted to your 'care.'

Now it happened, by very great accident, that the justice, before whom the girl was brought, understood the law: turning therefore, to Booth, he said---'Do 'you say, Sir, that this girl was entrusted with the 'shifts?'

'Yes, Sir,' said Booth, 'she was entrusted with 'every thing.'

'And will you swear that the goods stolen,' said the justice, 'are worth forty shillings?'

'No, indeed Sir,' answered Booth, 'nor that they 'are worth thirty either.'

'Then, Sir,' cries the justice, 'the girl cannot be 'guilty of felony.'

'How, Sir,' said Booth, 'is it not a breach of 'trust? and is not a breach of trust felony, and the 'worst of felony too?'

'No, Sir,' answered the justice, 'a breach of trust 'is no crime in our law, unless it be in a servant, and 'then the act of parliament requires the goods taken to 'be of the value of forty shillings.'

'So then a servant,' cries Booth, 'may rob his master of thirty-nine shillings whenever he pleases, and 'he cannot be punished.'

'If the goods are under his care, he cannot,' cries the justice.

'I ask your pardon, Sir,' says Booth, 'I do not 'doubt what you say; but sure this is a very extraor'dinary law.'

'Perhaps I think so too,' said the justice; 'but 'it

'it belongs not to my office to make or mend laws; 'my business is only to execute them. If, therefore 'the case be as you say, I must discharge the girl.'

'I hope, however, you will punish the pawnbroker,' cries Booth.

'If the girl is discharged,' cries the justice, 'so must 'the pawnbroker: for if the goods are not stolen, he 'cannot be guilty of receiving them knowing them to 'be stolen. And besides, as to his offence, to say the 'truth, I am almost weary of prosecuting it; for such 'are the difficulties laid in the way of this prosecution, 'that it is almost impossible to convict any one on it, 'And to speak my opinion plainly, such are the laws, 'and such the method of proceeding, that one would 'almost think our laws were rather made for the pro- 'tection of rogues, than for the punishment of them.'

Thus ended this examination: the thief and the receiver went about their business, and Booth departed in order to go home to his wife.

In his way home, Booth was met by a lady in a chair; who immediately, upon seeing him, stopped her chair, bolted out of it, and going directly up to him, said---'So, Mr. Booth, you have kept your word with me!'

This lady was no other than Miss Matthews, and the speech she meant, was of a promise made to her at the masquerade of visiting her within a day or two; which, whether he ever intended to keep, I cannot say; but in truth, the several accidents that had since happened to him, had so discomposed his mind, that he had absolutely forgot it.

Booth, however, was too sensible, and too well bred, to make the excuse of forgetfulness to a lady; nor could he readily find any other. While he stood, therefore, hesitating, and looking not over-wise, Miss Matthews said---'Well, Sir, since by your confusion I see 'you have some grace left, I will pardon you on one 'condition; and that is, that you will sup with me 'this night. But if you fail me now, expect all the

'revenge

'revenge of an injured woman!' She then bound herself by a most outrageous oath, that she would complain to his wife. 'And I am sure,' says she, 'she is 'so much a woman of honour, as to do me justice. 'And though I miscarried in my first attempt, be 'assured I will take care of my second.'

Booth asked her what she meant by her first attempt; to which she answered, that she had already writ his wife an account of his ill usage of her, but that she was pleased it had miscarried. She then repeated her asseverations, that she would now do it effectually, if he disappointed her.

This threat she reckoned would most certainly terrify poor Booth; and, indeed she was not mistaken; for I believe it would have been impossible, by any other menace, or by any other means, to have brought him once even to balance in his mind on this question. But by this threat she prevailed; and Booth promised, upon his word and honour, to come to her at the hour appointed. After which she took leave of him with a squeeze by the hand, and a smiling countenance, and walked back to her chair.

But, however, she might be pleased with having obtained this promise, Booth was far from being delighted with the thoughts of having given it. He looked, indeed, upon the consequences of this meeting with horror; but as to the consequence which was so apparently intended by the lady, he resolved against it. At length, he came to this determination; to go, according to his appointment, to argue the matter with the lady, and to convince her if possible, that from a regard to his honour only, he must discontinue her acquaintance. If this failed to satisfy her, and she still persisted in her threats to acquaint his wife with the affair, he then resolved, whatever pains it cost him, to communicate the whole truth himself to Amelia, from whose goodness he doubted not but to obtain an absolute remission,

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

In which Amelia appears in a Light more amiable than gay.

WE will now return to Amelia, whom we left in ſome perturbation of mind departing from Mrs. Atkinſon.

Though ſhe had before walked through the ſtreets in a very improper dreſs with Mrs. Atkinſon, ſhe was unwilling, eſpecially as ſhe was alone, to return in the ſame manner. Indeed ſhe was ſcarce able to walk in her preſent condition; for the caſe of poor Atkinſon had much affected her tender heart, and her eyes had overflown with many tears.

It occurred likewiſe to her at preſent, that ſhe had not a ſingle ſhilling in her pocket or at home, to provide food for herſelf and family. In this ſituation ſhe reſolved to go immediately to the pawnbroker, whither ſhe had gone before, and to depoſit her picture for what ſhe could raiſe upon it. She then immediately took a chair, and put her deſign in execution.

The intrinſic value of the gold, in which this picture was ſet, and of the little diamonds which ſurrounded it, amounted to nine guineas. This therefore was advanced to her, and the prettieſt face in the world (ſuch is often the fate of beauty) was depoſited, as of no value, into the bargain.

When ſhe came home, ſhe found the following letter from Mrs. Atkinſon.---

'MY DEAREST MADAM,

'AS I know your goodneſs, I could not delay a 'moment acquainting you with the happy turn 'of my affairs ſince you went. The doctor, on his 'return to viſit my huſband, has aſſured me, that the 'captain was on the recovery, and in very little danger; 'and I really think he is ſince mended. I hope to 'wait on you ſoon with better news. Heaven bleſs you, 'dear Madam; and believe me to be, with the utmoſt 'ſincerity, your moſt obliged, obedient, humble ſer-'vant,

'ATKINSON.'

Amelia was really pleaſed with this letter; and now it being paſt four o'clock, ſhe deſpaired of ſeeing her huſband till the evening. She therefore provided ſome tarts for her children, and then eating nothing but a ſlice of bread and butter herſelf, ſhe began to prepare for the captain's ſupper.

There were two things of which her huſband was particularly fond, which, though it may bring the ſimplicity of his taſte into great contempt with ſome of my readers, I will venture to name. Theſe were, a fowl and egg-ſauce, and mutton broth: both which Amelia immediately purchaſed.

As ſoon as the clock ſtruck ſeven, the good creature went down into the kitchen, and began to exerciſe her talents in cookery, of which ſhe was a great miſtreſs, as ſhe was of every œconomical office, from the higheſt to the loweſt; and as no woman could outſhine her in a drawing-room, ſo none could make the drawing-room itſelf ſhine brighter than Amelia. And if I may ſpeak a bold truth, I queſtion whether it be poſſible to view this fine creature in a more amiable light, than while ſhe was dreſſing her huſband's ſupper with her little children playing round her.

It was now half an hour paſt eight, and the meat almoſt ready, the table likewiſe neatly ſpread with materials borrowed from her landlady, and ſhe began to grow a little uneaſy at Booth's not returning; when a ſudden knock at the door rouzed her ſpirits, and ſhe cried---' There, my dear, there is your good papa!' at which words ſhe darted ſwiftly up ſtairs, and opened the door to her huſband.

She deſired her huſband to walk up into the dining-room, and ſhe would come to him in an inſtant; for ſhe was deſirous to increaſe his pleaſure, by ſurpriſing him with two favourite diſhes. She then went down again to the kitchen, where the maid of the houſe undertook to ſend up the ſupper, and ſhe with her children returned to Booth.

He then told her conciſely what had happened, with

relation

relation to the girl. To which she scarce made any answer; but asked him if he had not dined. He assured her he had not eat a morsel the whole day. 'Well,' says she, 'my dear, I am a fellow sufferer; 'but we shall enjoy our supper the more; for I have 'made a little provision for you, as I guessed what 'might be the case. I have got you a bottle of wine 'too. And here is a clean cloth and smiling counte-'nance, my dear Will. Indeed, I am in unusual 'good spirits to-night, and I have made a promise to 'the children, which you must confirm; I have pro-'mised to let them sit up this one night to supper with 'us. Nay, do not look so serious; cast off all uneasy 'thoughts; I have a present for you here; no matter 'how I came by it.' At which words she put eight guineas into his hand, crying---'Come, my dear Bill, 'be gay. Fortune will yet be kind to us; at least, let 'us be happy this night. Indeed, the pleasures of 'many women, during their whole lives, will not 'amount to my happiness this night, if you will be in 'good humour.'

Booth fetched a deep sigh, and cried---'How unhappy 'am I, my dear, that I cannot sup with you to-'night!'

As in the delightful month of June, when the sky is all serene, and the whole face of nature looks with a pleasing and smiling aspect, suddenly a dark cloud spreads itself over the hemisphere, the sun vanishes from our sight, and every object is obscured by a dark and horrid gloom; so happened it to Amelia: the joy that enlightened every feature disappeared in a moment; the lustre forsook her shining eyes: and all the little loves that played and wantoned in her cheeks, hung their drooping heads; and with a faint trembling voice, she repeated her husband's words---'Not sup 'with me to night, my dear!'

'Indeed, my dear,' answered he, 'I cannot. I need 'not tell you how uneasy it makes me, or that I am as 'much disappointed as yourself; but I am engaged to

'sup abroad. I have absolutely given my honour 'and besides, it is on business of importance.'

'My dear,' said she, 'I say no more. I am convinced you would not willingly sup from me. I own, 'it is a very particular disappointment to me to-night, 'when I had purposed unusual pleasure; but the same 'reason which is sufficient to you, ought to be so 'to me.'

Booth made his wife a compliment on her ready compliance; and then asked what she intended by giving him that money, or how she came by it.

'I intend, my dear,' said she, 'to give to you, that 'is all. As to the manner in which I came by it, you 'know, Billy, that is not very material. You are well 'assured I got it by no means that would displease you; 'and, perhaps, another time I may tell you.'

Booth asked no farther questions; but he returned it her, and insisted on her taking all but one guinea, saying she was the safest treasurer. He then promised her to make all the haste home in his power: and he hoped, he said, to be with her in an hour and a half at farthest, and then took his leave.

When he was gone, the poor disappointed Amelia sat down to supper with her children; with whose company she was forced to console herself for the absence of her husband.

CHAP. IX.

A very Tragic Scene.

THE clock had struck eleven, and Amelia was just proceeding to put her children to bed, when she heard a knock at the street-door. Upon which the boy cried out---'There is papa, mamma; pray let me stay 'and see him before I go to bed.' This was a favour very easily obtained; for Amelia instantly ran down stairs, exulting in the goodness of her husband for returning so soon, though half an hour was already elapsed beyond the time in which he promised to return.

Poor Amelia was now again disappointed; for it

was not her huſband at the door, but a ſervant with a letter for him, which he delivered into her hands. She immediately returned up ſtairs, and ſaid---'It is 'not your papa, my dear; but I hope it is one who 'hath brought us ſome good news.' For Booth had told her, that he hourly expected to receive ſuch from the great man, and had deſired her to open any letter which came to him in his abſence.

Amelia, therefore, broke open the letter, and read as follows---

'SIR,

'AFTER what hath paſſed between us, I need only 'tell you that I know you ſupped this very night 'alone with Miſs Matthews: a fact, which will upbraid 'you ſufficiently, without putting me to that trouble, 'and will very well account for my deſiring the favour 'of ſeeing you to-morrow in Hyde Park, at ſix in the 'morning. You will forgive my reminding you, once 'more, how inexcuſable this behaviour is in you, who 'are poſſeſſed in your own wife of the moſt ineſtimable 'jewel. Yours, &c.

'T. JAMES.'

'I ſhall bring piſtols with me.'

It is not eaſy to deſcribe the agitation of Amelia's mind when ſhe read this letter. She threw herſelf into her chair, turned as pale as death, began to tremble all over, and had juſt power enough left to tap the bottle of wine, which ſhe had hitherto preſerved entire for her huſband, and to drink off a large bumper.

The little boy perceived the ſtrange ſymptoms which appeared in his mother; and running to her, he cried---'What is the matter, my dear mamma? you do not 'look well. No harm hath happened to poor papa, 'I hope. Sure that bad man hath not carried him 'away again.'

Amelia anſwered---'No, child, nothing, nothing at 'all.' And then a large ſhower of tears came to her aſſiſtance; which preſently after produced the ſame in the eyes of both the children.

Amelia, after a ſhort ſilence, looking tenderly at her children, cried out---'It is too much, too much to 'bear! Why did I bring theſe little wretches into the 'world! why were theſe innocents born to ſuch a 'fate!' She then threw her arms round them both, (for they were before embracing her knees) and cried--- 'O my children! my children! forgive me, my babes. 'Forgive me that I have brought you into ſuch a world 'as this. You are undone; my children are undone!'

The little boy anſwered with great ſpirit---'How undone, mamma? my ſiſter and I don't care a farthing for 'being undone. Do not cry ſo upon our account, we 'are both very well; indeed we are. But do pray 'tell us: I am ſure ſome accident hath happened to 'poor papa!'

'Mention him no more,' cries Amelia; 'your 'papa is---indeed he is a wicked man; he cares not 'not for any of us.---O heavens, is this the happineſs 'I promiſed myſelf this evening!' At which words ſhe fell into an agony, holding both her children in her arms.

The maid of the houſe now entered the room, with a letter in her hand, which ſhe had received from a porter, whoſe arrival the reader will not wonder to have been unheard by Amelia in her preſent condition.

The maid, upon her entrance into the room, perceiving the ſituation of Amelia, cried out---'Good heavens! 'Madam, what is the matter!' Upon which, Amelia, who had a little recovered herſelf after the laſt violent vent of her paſſion, ſtarted up, and cried---'Nothing, Mrs. 'Suſan, nothing extraordinary. I am ſubject to theſe 'fits ſometimes; but I am very well now. Come, my 'dear children, I am very well again; indeed I am. 'You muſt now go to bed; Mrs. Suſan will be ſo good 'as to put you to bed.'

'But why doth not papa love us?' cries the little boy: 'I am ſure, we have none of us done any thing 'to diſoblige him.'

This innocent queſtion of the child ſo ſtung Amelia, that

that she had the utmost difficulty to prevent a relapse. However, she took another dram of wine; for so it might be called to her, who was the most temperate of women, and never exceeded three glasses on any occasion. In this glass she drank her children's health, and soon after so well soothed and composed them, that they went quietly away with Mrs. Susan.

The maid, in the shock she had conceived at the melancholy, indeed frightful scene, which had presented itself to her at her first coming into the room, had quite forgot the letter, which she had held in her hand. However, just at her departure, she recollected it, and delivered it to Amelia! who was no sooner alone, than she opened it, and read as follows---

'MY DEAR SWEETEST LOVE,

'I Write this from the bailiff's house, where I was 'formerly, and to which I am again brought at 'the suit of that villain Trent. I have the misfortune 'to think I owe this accident (I mean, that it happened 'to-night) to my own folly, in endeavouring to keep a 'secret from you. O, my dear, had I had resolution to 'confess my crime to you, your forgiveness would, I 'am convinced, have cost me only a few blushes, and 'I had now been happy in your arms. Fool that I 'was, to leave you on such an account, and to add to 'a former transgression a new one. Yet, by heavens, 'I mean not a transgression of the like kind; for of 'that I am not, nor ever will be guilty: and when 'you know the true reason of my leaving you to-night, 'I think you will pity rather than upbraid me. I am 'sure you would, if you knew the compunction with 'which I left you, to go to the most worthless, the 'most infamous---Do guess the rest---Guess that crime 'with which I cannot stain my paper; but still believe 'me no more guilty than I am; or, if it will lessen 'your vexation at what hath befallen me, believe me 'as guilty as you please, and think me, for a while at 'least, as undeserving of you as I think myself. This 'paper and pen are so bad, I question whether you can

'read

'read what I write; I almoſt doubt whether I wiſh 'you ſhould. Yet this I will endeavour to make 'as legible as I can---Be comforted, my dear love, 'and ſtill keep up your ſpirits, with the hopes of 'better days. The doctor will be in town to-morrow, 'and I truſt in his goodneſs for my delivery once more 'from this place, and that I ſhall ſoon be able to repay 'him. That Heaven may bleſs and preſerve you, 'is the prayer of, my deareſt love, your ever fond, 'affectionate, and hereafter faithful huſband,

'W. BOOTH.'

Amelia pretty well gueſſed the obſcure meaning of this letter; which, though at another time it might have given her unſpeakable torment, was at preſent rather of the medicinal kind, and ſerved to allay her anguiſh. Her anger to Booth too began a little to abate, and was ſoftened by her concern for his misfortune. Upon the whole, however, ſhe paſſed a miſerable and ſleepleſs night, her gentle mind torn and diſtracted with various and contending paſſions, diſtreſſed with doubts, and wandering in a kind of twilight, which preſented her only objects of different degrees of horror, and where black deſpair cloſed at a ſmall diſtance the gloomy proſpect.

BOOK XII.

CHAP. I.

The Book begins with polite Hiſtory.

BEFORE we return to the miſerable couple, whom we left at the end of the laſt book, we will give our readers the more chearful view of the gay and happy family of Colonel James.

Mrs. James, when ſhe could not, as we have ſeen, prevail with Amelia to accept that invitation which, at the deſire of the colonel, ſhe had ſo kindly and obediently carried her, returned to her huſband, and acquainted him with the ill ſucceſs of her embaſſy; at which, to ſay the truth, ſhe was almoſt as much diſap-

pointed as the colonel himſelf: for he had not taken a much ſtronger liking to Amelia, than ſhe herſelf had conceived for Booth. This will account for ſome paſſages, which may have a little ſurprized the reader in the former chapters of this hiſtory, as we were not then at leiſure to communicate to him a hint of this kind; it was, indeed, on Mr. Booth's account that ſhe had been at the trouble of changing her dreſs at the maſquerade.

But her paſſions of this ſort, happily for her, were not extremely ſtrong; ſhe was therefore eaſily baulked, and as ſhe met with no encouragement from Booth, ſhe ſoon gave way to the impetuoſity of Miſs Matthews; and from that time ſcarce thought more of the affair, till her huſband's deſign againſt the wife revived her's likewiſe; inſomuch, that her paſſion was, at this time, certainly ſtrong enough for Booth to produce a good hearty hatred for Amelia, whom ſhe now abuſed to the colonel in very groſs terms; both on the account of her poverty, and her inſolence: for ſo ſhe termed the refuſal of all her offers.

The colonel ſeeing no hopes of ſoon poſſeſſing his new miſtreſs, began, like a prudent and wiſe man, to turn his thoughts towards the ſecuring his old one. From what his wife had mentioned concerning the behaviour of the ſhepherdeſs, and particularly her preference of Booth, he had little doubt but that this was the identical Miſs Matthews. He reſolved therefore to watch her cloſely, in hopes of diſcovering Booth's intrigue with her. In this, beſides the remainder of affection which he yet preſerved for that lady, he had another view, as it would give him a fair pretence to quarrel with Booth; who, by carrying on this intrigue, would have broke his word and honour given to him. And he began now to hate poor Booth heartily, from the ſame reaſon from which Mrs. James had contracted her averſion to Amelia.

The colonel therefore employed an inferior kind of pimp to watch the lodgings of Miſs Matthews, and to acquaint

acquaint him if Booth, whoſe perſon was known to the pimp, made any viſit there.

The pimp faithfully performed his office, and having laſt night made the wiſhed-for diſcovery, immediately acquainted his maſter with it.

Upon this news, the colonel preſently diſpatched to Booth the ſhort note which we have before ſeen. He ſent it to his own houſe inſtead of Miſs Matthews's, with hopes of that very accident which actually did happen. Not that he had any ingredient of the bully in him, and deſired to be prevented from fighting, but with a proſpect of injuring Booth in the affection and eſteem of Amelia, and of recommending himſelf ſomewhat to her by appearing in the light of her champion; for which purpoſe he added that compliment to Amelia in his letter. He concluded, upon the whole, that if Booth himſelf opened the letter, he would certainly meet him the next morning; but if his wife ſhould open it before he came home, it might have the effects before-mentioned; and for his future expoſtulation with Booth, it would not be in Amelia's power to prevent it.

Now it happened that this pimp had more maſters than one. Amongſt theſe was the worthy Mr. Trent; for whom he had often done buſineſs of the pimping vocation. He had been employed, indeed, in the ſervice of the great peer himſelf, under the direction of the ſaid Trent, and was the very perſon who had aſſiſted the ſaid Trent in dogging Booth and his wife to the opera-houſe on the maſquerade night.

This ſubaltern pimp was with his ſuperior, Trent, yeſterday morning, when he found a bailiff with him in order to receive his inſtructions for the arreſting Booth; when the bailiff ſaid it would be a very difficult matter to take him; for that, to his knowledge, he was as ſhy a cock as any in England. The ſubaltern immediately acquainted Trent with the buſineſs in which he was employed by the colonel. Upon which Trent enjoined him, the moment he had ſet him, to

give

give immediate notice to the bailiff; which he agreed to, and performed accordingly.

The bailiff, on receiving the note, immediately set out for his stand at an alehouse within three doors of Miss Matthews's lodging. At which, unfortunately for poor Booth, he arrived a very few minutes before Booth left that lady in order to return to Amelia.

These were several matters, of which we thought necessary our reader should be informed; for, besides that it conduces greatly to a perfect understanding of all history, there is no exercise of the mind of a sensible reader more pleasant, than the tracing of the several small and almost imperceptible links in every chain of events, by which all the great actions of the world are produced. We will now, in the next chapter, proceed with our history.

CHAP. II.

In which Amelia visits her Husband.

AMELIA, after much anxious thinking, in which she sometimes flattered herself that her husband was less guilty than she had at first imagined him, and that he had some good excuse to make for himself, (for, indeed, she was not so able as willing to make one for him) at length resolved to set out for the bailiff's castle. Having, therefore, strictly recommended the care of her children to her good landlady, she sent for a hackney-coach, and ordered the coachman to drive to Gray's Inn Lane.

When she came to the house, and asked for the captain, the bailiff's wife, who came to the door, guessing, by the greatness of her beauty, and the disorder of her dress, that she was a young lady of pleasure, answered, surlily---, Captain! I do not know of any captain that 'is here, not I.' For this good woman was, as well as Dame Purgante in Prior, a bitter enemy to all whores, especially to those of the handsome kind; for some such she suspected to go shares with her in a certain property to which the law gave her the sole right.

Amelia replied, she was certain that Captain Booth was there.

there. 'Well, if he is so,' cries the bailiff's wife, 'you may come into the kitchen, if you will, and he 'shall be called down to you, if you have any business 'with him.' At the same time she muttered something to herself, and concluded a little more intelligibly, though still in a muttering voice, that she kept no such house.

Amelia, whose innocence gave her no suspicion of the true cause of this good woman's sullenness, was frightened, and began to fear she knew not what. At last she made a shift to totter into the kitchen, when the mistress of the house asked her---'Well, Madam, who 'shall I tell the captain wants to speak with him?'

'I ask your pardon, Madam,' cries Amelia; 'in 'my confusion, I really forgot you did not know me: 'tell him, if you please, that I am his wife.'

'And are you, indeed, his wife, Madam?' cries Mrs. Bailiff, a little softened.

'Yes, indeed, and upon my honour,' answers Amelia.

'If this be the case,' cries the other, 'you may 'walk up stairs, if you please. Heaven forbid I should 'part man and wife! Indeed, I think they can never 'be too much together. But I never will suffer any 'bad doings, in my house, nor any of the town ladies 'to come to gentlemen here.'

Amelia answered, that she liked her the better; for, indeed, in her present disposition, Amelia was as much exasperated against wicked women as the virtuous mistress of the house, or any other virtuous woman could be.

The bailiff's wife then ushered Amelia up stairs, and having unlocked the prisoner's door, cried---'Captain, here is your lady, Sir, come to see you.' At which words, Booth started up from his chair, and caught Amelia in his arms, embracing her for a considerable time with so much rapture, that the bailiff's wife, who was an eye-witness of this violent fondness, began to suspect whether Amelia had really told her truth.

truth. However, she had some little awe of the captain, and for fear of being in the wrong did not interfere, but shut the door, and turned the key.

When Booth found himself alone with his wife, and had vented the first violence of his rapture in kisses and embraces, he looked tenderly at her, and cried---' Is ' it possible, Amelia, is it possible you can have this ' goodness to follow such a wretch as me to such a ' place as this? or do you come to upbraid me with ' my guilt, and to sink me down to that perdition I so ' justly deserve?'

' Am I so given to upbraiding, then?' says she, in a gentle voice; ' have I ever given you occasion to think ' I would sink you to perdition?'

' Far be it from me, my love, to think so,' answered he. ' And yet you may forgive the utmost fears of an ' offending, penitent sinner. I know, indeed, the extent of your goodness, and yet I know my guilt so ' great------'

' Alas, Mr. Booth!' said she, ' what guilt is this ' which you mention, and which you writ to me of ' last night? Sure, by your mentioning to me so much, ' you intend to tell me more: nay, indeed, to tell me ' all, and not leave my mind open to suspicions, perhaps ten times worse than the truth.'

' Will you give me a patient hearing?' said he.

' I will, indeed,' answered she; ' nay, I am prepared to hear the worst you can unfold; nay, perhaps ' the worst is short of my apprehensions.'

Booth then, after a little farther apology, began and related to her the whole that had passed between him and Miss Matthews, from their first meeting in the prison, to their separation the preceding evening. All which, as the reader knows it already, it would be tedious and unpardonable to transcribe from his mouth. He told her likewise all that he had done and suffered, to conceal his transgression from her knowledge. This, he assured her, was the business of his visit last night;

the consequence of which was, he declared in the most solemn manner, no other than an absolute quarrel with Miss Matthews, of whom he had taken a final leave.

When he had ended his narration, Amelia, after a short silence, answered---' Indeed, I firmly believe every ' word you have said; but I cannot now forgive you the ' fault you have confessed---and my reason is, because ' I have forgiven it long ago. Here, my dear,' said she, ' is an instance that I am likewise capable of keeping a ' secret.' She then delivered her husband a letter, which she had some time ago received from Miss Matthews, and which was the same which that lady had mentioned, and supposed, as Booth had never heard of it, that it had miscarried; for she sent it by the penny-post. In this letter, which was signed by a feigned name, she had acquainted Amelia with the infidelity of her husband, and had besides very greatly abused him; taxing him with many falshoods; and, among the rest, with having spoken very slightingly and disrespectfully of his wife.

Amelia never shined forth to Booth in so amiable and great a light; nor did his own unworthiness ever appear to him so mean and contemptible, as at this instant. However, when he had read the letter, he uttered many violent protestations to her, that all which related to herself was absolutely false.

' I am convinced it is,' said she. ' I would not ' have a suspicion of the contrary for the world. I assure you, I had, till last night revived it in my memory, almost forgot the letter; for, as I well knew ' from whom it came, by her mentioning obligations ' which she had conferred on you, and which you had ' more than once spoken to me of, I made large allowances for the situation you was then in; and I was ' the more satisfied, as the letter itself, as well as many ' other circumstances, convinced me the affair was at ' an end.'

Booth now uttered the most extravagant expressions of admi-

admiration and fondneſs that his heart could dictate and accompanied them with the warmeſt embraces. All which warmth and tenderneſs ſhe returned; and tears of love and joy ruſhed from both their eyes. So raviſhed, indeed, were their hearts, that for ſome time they both forgot the dreadful ſituation of their affairs.

This, however, was but a ſhort reverie. It ſoon recurred to Amelia, that though ſhe had the liberty of leaving that houſe when ſhe pleaſed, ſhe could not take her beloved huſband with her. This thought ſtung her tender boſom to the quick; and ſhe could not ſo far command herſelf, as to refrain from many ſorrowful exclamations againſt the hardſhip of their deſtiny; but when ſhe ſaw the effect they had upon Booth, ſhe ſtifled her riſing grief, forced a little chearfulneſs into her countenance, and exerting all the ſpirits ſhe could raiſe within herſelf, expreſſed her hopes of ſeeing a ſpeedy end to their ſufferings. She then aſked her huſband what ſhe ſhould do for him, and to whom ſhe ſhould apply for his deliverance.

'You know, my dear,' cries Booth, 'that the 'doctor is to be in town ſome time to-day. My hopes 'of immediate redemption are only in him; and if that 'can be obtained, I make no doubt but of the ſucceſs 'of that affair which is in the hands of a gentleman 'who hath faithfully promiſed, and in whoſe power I 'am ſo well aſſured it is, to ſerve me.'

Thus did this poor man ſupport his hopes by a dependance on that ticket which he had ſo dearly purchaſed of one who pretended to manage the wheels in the great ſtate-lottery of preferment. A lottery, indeed, which hath this to recommend it, that many poor wretches feed their imaginations with the proſpect of a prize during their whole lives, and never diſcover they have drawn a blank.

Amelia, who was of a pretty ſanguine temper, and was entirely ignorant of theſe matters, was full as eaſy to be deceived into hopes as her huſband; but in reality

at present she turned her eyes to no distant prospect, the desire of regaining her husband's liberty having engrossed her whole mind.

While they were discoursing on these matters, they heard a violent noise in the house, and immediately after several persons passed by their door up stairs to the apartment over their head. This greatly terrified the gentle spirit of Amelia, and she cried---'Good Heavens! my dear, must I leave you in this horrid place! I am terrified with a thousand fears concerning you!'

Booth endeavoured to comfort her; saying, that he was in no manner of danger, and that he doubted not but that the doctor would soon be with him. 'And stay, my dear,' cries he; 'now I recollect, suppose you should apply to my old friend James; for I believe you are pretty well satisfied that your apprehensions of him were groundless. I have no reason to think but that he would be as ready to serve me as formerly.'

Amelia turned as pale as ashes at the name of James; and, instead of making a direct answer to her husband, she laid hold of him, and cried---'My dear, I have one favour to beg of you, and I insist on your granting it me.'

Booth readily swore he would deny her nothing.

'It is only this, my dear,' said she, 'that, if that detested colonel comes, you will not see him. Let the people of the house tell him you are not here.'

'He knows nothing of my being here,' answered Booth; 'but why should I refuse to see him, if he should be kind enough to come hither to me? Indeed, my Amelia, you have taken a dislike to that man without sufficient reason.'

'I speak not upon that account,' cries Amelia; 'but I have had dreams last night about you two. Perhaps you will laugh at my folly; but pray indulge it. Nay, I insist on your promise of not denying it me.'

'Dreams,

‘ Dreams, my dear creature!’ answered he: ‘ what ‘ dream can you have had of us!’

‘ One too horrible to be mentioned,’ replied she. ‘ I cannot think of it without horror; and, unless you ‘ will promise me not to see the colonel till I return, I ‘ positively will never leave you.’

‘ Indeed, my Amelia,’ said Booth, ‘ I never knew ‘ you unreasonable before. How can a woman of your ‘ sense talk of dreams?’

‘ Suffer me to be once at least unreasonable,’ said Amelia; ‘ as you are so good natured to say I am not ‘ often so. Consider what I have lately suffered, and ‘ how weak my spirits must be at this time.’

As Booth was going to speak, the bailiff without any ceremony entered the room, and cried- -‘ No offence, I hope, Madam; my wife, it seems, did not ‘ know you. She thought the captain had a mind for ‘ a bit of flesh by the bye. But I have quieted all ‘ matters: for I know you very well; I have seen that ‘ handsome face many a time when I have been wait- ‘ ing upon the captain formerly. No offence, I hope, ‘ Madam; but if my wife was as handsome as you are, ‘ I should not look for worse goods abroad.’

Booth conceived some displeasure at this speech; but he did not think proper to express more than a ‘ *Pish!*’ And then asked the bailiff what was the meaning of the noise they heard just now.

‘ I know of no noise,’ answered the bailiff. ‘ Some ‘ of my men have been carrying a piece of bad luggage ‘ up stairs; a poor rascal that resisted the law and jus- ‘ tice; so I gave him a cut or two with a hanger. If ‘ they should prove mortal, he must thank himself for ‘ it. If a man will not behave like a gentleman to an ‘ officer, he must take the consequence: but I must ‘ say that for you, captain, you behave yourself like a ‘ gentleman, and therefore I shall always use you as ‘ such; and I hope you will find bail soon, with all ‘ my heart. This is but a paultry sum to what the

 ‘ last

'last was; and I do assure you there is nothing else 'against you in the office.'

The latter part of the bailiff's speech somewhat comforted Amelia, who had been a little frightened by the former; and she soon after took leave of her husband, to go in quest of the doctor; who, as Amelia had heard that morning, was expected in town that very day, which was somewhat sooner than he intended at his departure.

Before she went, however, she left a strict charge with the bailiff, who ushered her very civilly down stairs, that if one Colonel James came there to enquire for her husband, he should deny that he was there.

She then departed; and the bailiff immediately gave a very strict charge to his wife, his maid, and his followers, that if one Colonel James, or any one from him, should enquire after the captain, they should let him know he had the captain above stairs; for he doubted not but that the colonel was one of Booth's creditors; and he hoped for a second bail-bond by his means.

CHAP. III.

Containing Matter pertinent to the History.

AMELIA, in her way to the doctor's, determined just to stop at her own lodgings, which lay a little out of the road, and to pay a momentary visit to her children.

This was fortunate enough; for had she called at the doctor's house, she would have heard nothing of him, which would have caused in her some alarm and disappointment; for the doctor was set down at Mrs. Atkinson's, where he was directed to Amelia's lodgings, to which he went before he called at his own; and here Amelia now found him playing with her two children.

The doctor had been a little surprized at not finding Amelia at home, nor any one that could give an account of her. He was now more surprized to see her

come

come in ſuch a dreſs, and at the diſorder which he very plainly perceived in her pale and melancholy countenance. He addreſſed her firſt, (for, indeed, ſhe was in no great haſte to ſpeak) and cried---' My dear child, what is the matter? where is your huſband? ' Some miſchief, I am afraid, hath happened to him in ' my abſence.'

' Oh, my dear doctor!' anſwered Amelia, ' ſure ' ſome good angel hath ſent you hither. My poor ' Will is arreſted again. I left him in the moſt miſe- ' rable condition in the very houſe where your goodneſs ' formerly relieved him.'

' Arreſted!' cries the doctor. ' Then it muſt be for ' ſome very inconſiderable trifle.'

' I wiſh it was,' ſaid Amelia; ' but it is for no leſs ' than fifty pounds.'

' Then,' cries the doctor, ' he hath been diſinge- ' nuous with me. He told me he did not owe ten ' pounds in the world for which he was liable to be ' ſued.'

' I know not what to ſay,' cries Amelia. ' Indeed, ' I am afraid to tell you the truth.'

' How, child!' ſaid the doctor; ' I hope you will ' never diſguiſe it to any one, eſpecially to me. Any ' prevarication, I promiſe you, will forfeit my friend- ' ſhip for ever.'

' I will tell you the whole,' cries Amelia, ' and rely ' entirely on your goodneſs.' She then related the gaming ſtory, not forgetting to ſet in the fulleſt light, and to lay the ſtrongeſt emphaſis on, his promiſe never to play again.

The doctor fetched a deep ſigh when he had heard Amelia's relation, and cried---' I am ſorry, child, for ' the ſhare you are to partake in your huſband's ſuffer- ' ings! but as for him, I really think he deſerves no ' compaſſion. You ſay, he hath promiſed never to ' play again; but I muſt tell you, he hath broken his ' promiſe to me already: for I had heard he was for-

' merly

'merly addicted to this vice, and had given him suffi-
'cient caution against it. You will consider, child,
'I am already pretty largely engaged for him; every
'farthing of which I am sensible I must pay. You
'know I would go to the utmost verge of prudence to
'serve you; but I must not exceed my ability, which
'is not very great; and I have several families on my
'hands, who are by misfortune alone brought to want.
'I do assure you, I cannot at present answer for such
'a sum as this, without distressing my own circum-
'stances.'

'Then Heaven have mercy upon us all!' cries Amelia; 'for we have no other friend on earth! My 'husband is undone; and these poor little wretches must 'be starved!'

The doctor cast his eyes on the children, and then cried---'I hope not so. I told you I must distress my 'circumstances, and I will distress them this once on 'your account, and on the account of these poor little 'babes. But things must not go on any longer in this 'way. You must take an heroic resolution. I will 'hire a coach for you to-morrow morning, which shall 'carry you all down to my parsonage-house. There 'you shall have my protection till something can be 'done for your husband; of which, to be plain with 'you, I at present see no likelihood.'

Amelia fell upon her knees in an extasy of thanksgiving to the doctor, who immediately raised her up, and placed her in the chair. She then recollected herself, and said---'Oh! my worthy friend, I have still 'another matter to mention to you, in which I must 'have both your advice and assistance. My soul blushes 'to give you all this trouble; but what other friend 'have I? indeed, what other friend could I apply to 'so properly on such an occasion?'

The doctor, with a very kind voice and countenance, desired her to speak. She then said---'Oh, Sir! that 'wicked colonel, whom I have mentioned to you for-
'merly,

'merly, hath picked some quarrel with my husband, (for she did not think proper to mention the cause) 'and hath sent him a challenge. It came to my hand 'last night, after he was arrested; I opened and read 'it.'

'Give it me, child,' said the doctor.

She answered, she had burned it, as was indeed true. 'But I remember it was an appointment to meet at 'sword and pistol, this morning in Hyde Park.'

'Make yourself easy, my dear child,' cries the doctor. 'I will take care to prevent any mischief.'

'But consider, my dear Sir,' said she, this is a tender 'matter. My husband's honour is to be preserved as 'well as his life.'

'And so is his soul, which ought to be the dearest of 'all things,' cries the doctor. 'Honour! nonsense. 'Can honour dictate to him to disobey the express 'commands of his Maker, in compliance with a custom 'established by a set of blockheads, founded on false 'principles of virtue, in direct opposition to the plain 'and positive precepts of religion, and tending manifestly to give a sanction to ruffians, and protect them 'in all the ways of impudence and villainy?'

'All this, I believe, is very true,' cries Amelia; 'but yet you know, doctor, the opinion of the 'world.'

'You talk simply, child,' cries the doctor. 'What 'is the opinion of the world, opposed to religion and 'virtue! But you are in the wrong. It is not the 'opinion of the world; it is the opinion of the idle, ignorant, and profligate. It is impossible it should be 'the opinion of one man of sense, who is in earnest in 'his belief of our religion. Chiefly, indeed, it hath 'been upheld by the nonsense of women; who, either 'from their extreme cowardice, and desire of protection---or, as Mr. Bayle thinks, from their excessive 'vanity, have been always forward to countenance a 'set of hectors and bravoes, and to despise all men of

'modesty

'modesty and sobriety; though these are often, at the 'bottom, not only the better, but the braver men.

'You know, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I have never 'presumed to argue with you; your opinion is to me 'always instruction, and your word a law.'

'Indeed, child,' cries the doctor, 'I know you are 'a good woman; and yet I must observe to you, that 'this very desire of feeding the passion of female vanity 'with the heroism of her man, old Homer seems to 'make the characteristic of a bad and loose woman. 'He introduces Helen upbraiding her gallant with 'having quitted the fight, and left the victory to Me-'nelaus; and seeming to be sorry that she had left her 'husband, only because he was the better duelist of 'the two: but in how different a light doth he repre-'sent the tender and chaste love of Andromache to her 'worthy Hector! she dissuades him from exposing him-'self to danger, even in a just cause. This is, indeed, 'a weakness; but it is an amiable one, and becoming 'a true feminine character: but a woman, who out of 'heroic vanity (for so it is) would hazard not only the 'life, but the soul too, of her husband in a duel, is a 'monster, and ought to be painted in no other charac-'ter than that of a fury.'

'I assure you, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I never saw 'this matter in the odious light, in which you have 'truly represented it, before. I am ashamed to recollect 'what I have formerly said on this subject. And yet, 'whilst the opinion of the world is as it is, one would 'wish to comply as far as possible, especially as my 'husband is an officer of the army. If it can be done, 'therefore with safety to his honour------'

'Again honour;' cries the doctor. 'Indeed I will not 'suffer that noble word to be so basely and barbarously 'prostituted. I have known some of these men of 'honour, as they call themselves, to be the most arrant 'rascals in the universe.'

'Well, I ask your pardon,' said she. 'Reputation, 'then,

'then, if you pleaſe, or any other word you like better; you know my meaning very well.'

'I do know your meaning,' cries the doctor; 'and Virgil knew it a great while ago. The next time you ſee your friend Mrs. Atkinſon, aſk her what it was made Dido fall in love with Æneas.'

'Nay, dear Sir,' ſaid Amelia, 'do not railly me ſo unmercifully; think where my poor huſband is now.'

'He is,' anſwered the doctor, 'where I will preſently be with him. In the mean time do you pack up every thing in order for your journey to-morrow; for, if you are wiſe, you will not truſt your huſband a day longer in this town; therefore to packing.'

Amelia promiſed ſhe would, though indeed ſhe wanted not any warning for her journey on this account; for when ſhe packed up herſelf in the coach, ſhe packed up her all. However, ſhe did not think proper to mention this to the doctor; for as he was now in pretty good humour, ſhe did not care to venture again diſcompoſing his temper.

The doctor then ſat out for Gray's Inn Lane; and, as ſoon as he was gone, Amelia began to conſider of her incapacity to take a journey in her preſent ſituation, without even a clean ſhift. At laſt ſhe reſolved, as ſhe was poſſeſſed of ſeven guineas and a half, to go to her friend and redeem ſome of her own and her huſband's linen out of captivity; indeed, juſt ſo much as would render it barely poſſible for them to go out of town with any decency. And this reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

As ſoon as ſhe had finiſhed her buſineſs with the pawnbroker, (if a man who lends under thirty per cent. deſerves that name) he ſaid to her---'Pray, Madam, did you know that man that was here yeſterday, when you brought the picture?' Amelia anſwered in the negative. 'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid the broker, 'he knows you, though he did not recollect you while you was here, as your hood was drawn

'over

'over your face; but the moment you was gone, he
'begged to look at the picture, which I, thinking no
'harm, permitted. He had scarce looked upon it,
'when he cried out---" By heaven and earth, it is her
" picture!" He then asked me if I knew you. " In-
" deed," said I, " I never saw the lady before."

In this last particular, however, the pawnbroker a little favoured of his profession, and made a small deviation from the truth: for when the man had asked him if he knew the lady, he answered she was some poor undone woman, who had pawned all her clothes to him the day before: 'And I suppose,' says he, 'this 'picture is the last of her goods and chattels.' This hint we thought proper to give the reader, as it may chance to be material.

Amelia answered coldly, that she had taken so very little notice of the man, that she scarce remembered he was there.

'I assure you, Madam,' says the pawnbroker, 'he 'hath taken very great notice of you; for the man 'changed countenance upon what I said, and presently 'after begged me to give him a dram.---" Oho" thinks I to myself, " are you thereabouts! I would not be so " much in love with some folks, as some people are, " for more interest than I shall ever make of a thousand " pounds."

Amelia blushed, and said with some peevishness, that she knew nothing of the man; but supposed he was some impertinent fellow or other.

'Nay, Madam,' answered the pawnbroker, 'I assure 'you he is not worthy your regard. He is a poor 'wretch, and I believe I am possessed of most of his 'moveables. However, I hope you are not offended; 'for, indeed, he said no harm; but he was very 'strangely disordered, that is the truth of it.'

Amelia was very desirous of putting an end to this conversation, and altogether as eager to return to her children; she therefore bundled up her things as fast as she

she could, and calling for a hackney coach, directed the coachman to her lodgings, and bid him drive her home with all the haste he could.

CHAP. IV.

In which Dr. Harrison visits Colonel James.

THE Doctor, when he left Amelia, intended to go directly to Booth; but he presently changed his mind, and determined first to call on the colonel, as he thought it was proper to put an end to that matter, before he gave Booth his liberty.

The doctor found the two colonels, James and Bath together. They both received him very civilly: for James was a very well bred man; and Bath always shewed a particular respect for the clergy, he being indeed a perfect good christian, except in the articles of fighting and swearing.

Our divine sat some time without mentioning the subject of his errand, in hopes that Bath would go away; but when he found no likelihood of that, (for indeed Bath was of the two much the most pleased with his company) he told James that he had something to say to him relating to Mr. Booth, which he believed he might speak before his brother.

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' said James, 'for there can be 'no secrets between us which my brother may not 'hear.'

'I come then to you, Sir,' said the doctor, 'from 'the most unhappy woman in the world, to whose 'afflictions you have very greatly and cruelly added, by 'sending a challenge to her husband, which hath very 'luckily fallen into her hands; for had the man for 'whom you designed it, received it, I am afraid you 'would not have seen me upon this occasion.'

'If I writ such a letter to Mr. Booth, Sir,' said James, 'you may be assured I did not expect this visit 'in answer to it.'

'I do not think you did,' cries the doctor; 'but you 'have great reason to thank Heaven for ordering this

'matter contrary to your expectations. I know not 'what trifle may have drawn this challenge from you; 'but, after what I have some reason to know of you, 'Sir, I must plainly tell you, that if you had added 'to your guilt already committed against this man, 'that of having his blood upon your hands, your soul 'would have become as black as hell itself.'

'Give me leave to say,' cries the colonel, 'this is a 'language which I am not used to hear; and if your 'cloth was not your protection, you should not give it 'me with impunity. After what you know of me, Sir! 'What do you presume to know of me to my disad-'vantage?'

'You say my cloth is my protection, colonel,' answered the doctor, 'therefore pray lay aside your 'anger; I do not come with any design of affronting or 'offending you.'

'Very well,' cries Bath, 'that declaration is suffi-'cient from a clergyman, let him say what he pleases.'

'Indeed, Sir,' says the Doctor, very mildly, 'I con-'sult equally the good of you both; and, in a spiritual 'sense, more especially yours; for you know you have 'injured this poor man.'

'So far on the contrary,' cries James, 'that I have 'been his greatest benefactor; I scorn to upbraid him; 'but you force me to it. Nor have I ever done him the 'least injury.'

'Perhaps not,' said the doctor; 'I will alter what 'I have said. But for this I apply to your honour. 'Have you not intended him an injury, the very inten-'tion of which cancels every obligation?'

'How, Sir?' answered the colonel. 'What do you 'mean?'

'My meaning,' replied the doctor, 'is almost too 'tender to mention. Come, colonel, examine your own 'heart; and then answer me on your honour if you 'have not intended to do him the highest wrong which 'one man can do another?'

'I do

'I do not know what you mean by the queſtion,' anſwered the colonel.

'D---n me, the queſtion is very tranſparent,' cries Bath. 'From any other man, it would be an affront 'with the ſtrongeſt emphaſis, but from one of the 'doctor's cloth, it demands a categorical anſwer.'

'I am not a papiſt, Sir,' anſwered colonel James, 'nor am I obliged to confeſs to my prieſt. But if you 'have any thing to ſay, ſpeak openly; for I do not 'underſtand your meaning.'

'I have explained my meaning to you already,' ſaid the doctor, 'in a letter I wrote to you on the ſubject; a 'ſubject which I am ſorry I ſhould have any occaſion 'to write upon to a chriſtian.'

'I do remember now,' cries the colonel, 'that I 'received a very impertinent letter, ſomething like a 'ſermon againſt adultery; but I did not expect to hear 'the author own it to my face.'

'That brave man then, Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'ſtands before you, who dares own he wrote that letter, 'and dares affirm too, that it was writ on a juſt and 'ſtrong foundation. But if the hardneſs of your heart 'could prevail on you to treat my good intention with 'contempt and ſcorn; what, pray, could induce you to 'ſhew it, nay, to give it Mr. Booth? What motive 'could you have for that, unleſs you meant to inſult 'him, and to provoke your rival to give you that 'opportunity of putting him out of the world which 'you have ſince wickedly ſought by your challenge?'

'I give him the letter!' ſaid the colonel.

'Yes, Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'he ſhewed me the 'letter, and affirmed that you gave it him at the maſque'rade.'

'He is a lying raſcal then,' ſaid the colonel very paſſionately. 'I ſcarce took the trouble of reading the 'letter, and loſt it out of my pocket.'

Here Bath interfered, and explained this affair in the manner in which it happened, and with which the rea-

der is already acquainted. He concluded by great eulogiums on the performance, and declared it was one of the most *enthusiastic* (meaning, perhaps, *ecclesiastic*) letters that was ever written. 'And d---n me,' says he, 'if I do not respect the author with the utmost 'emphasis of thinking.'

The doctor now recollected what had passed with Booth, and perceived he had made a mistake of one colonel for another. This he presently acknowledged to Colonel James, and said the mistake had been his, and not Booth's.

Bath now collected all his gravity and dignity, as he called it, into his countenance, and addressing himself to James, said---'And was that letter writ to you, 'brother? I hope you never deserved any suspicion of 'this kind.'

'Brother,' cries James, 'I am accountable to myself 'for my actions, and shall not render an account either 'to you, or that gentleman.'

'As to me, brother,' answered Bath, 'you say 'right: but I think this gentleman may call you to an 'account; nay, I think it is his duty so to do. And 'let me tell you, brother, there is one much greater than 'he to whom you must give an account. Mrs. Booth 'is really a fine woman, a lady of most *imperious* and 'majestic presence. I have heard you often say, that 'you liked her; and if you have quarrelled with her 'husband upon this account, by all the dignity of man, 'I think you ought to ask his pardon.'

'Indeed, brother,' cries James, 'I can bear this no 'longer; you will make me angry presently.'

'Angry, brother James!' cries Bath; 'angry---I 'love you, brother, and have obligations to you. I 'will say no more; but I hope you know I do not fear 'making any man angry.'

James answered, he knew it well: and then the doctor apprehending that while he was stopping up one breach, he should make another, presently interfered, and

and turned the discourse back to Booth. 'You tell me, 'Sir,' said he to James, 'that my gown is my protection; let it then at least protect me where I have had 'no design in offending; where I have consulted your 'highest welfare, as in truth I did in writing this letter. 'And if you did not in the least deserve any such suspicion, still you have no cause for resentment. Caution 'against sin, even to the innocent, can never be unwholesome. But this, I assure you, whatever anger you 'have to me, you can have none to poor Booth, who 'was entirely ignorant of my writing to you, and who, 'I am certain, never entertained the least suspicion of 'you; on the contrary, reveres you with the highest 'esteem, and love and gratitude. Let me, therefore 'reconcile all matters between you, and bring you 'together, before he hath even heard of this challenge.'

'Brother,' cries Bath, 'I hope I shall not make you 'angry---I lye when I say so; for I am indifferent to 'any man's anger.---Let me be an accessary to what 'the doctor hath said. I think I may be trusted with 'matters of this nature; and it is a little unkind that, 'if you intended to send a challenge, you did not make 'me the bearer. But, indeed, as to what appears to 'me, this matter may be very well made up; and as 'Mr. Booth did not know of the challenge, I do not 'see why he ever should, any more than your giving him 'the lye just now; but that he shall never have from 'me, nor, I believe, from this gentleman; for, 'indeed, if he should, it would be incumbent upon him 'to cut your throat.'

'Look'e, doctor,' said James, 'I do not deserve the 'unkind suspicion you just now threw out against me. 'I never thirsted after any man's blood; and as for 'what hath passed, since this discovery hath happened, 'I may perhaps not think it worth my while to 'trouble myself any more about it.'

The doctor was not contented with *perhaps*; he

insisted on a firm promise, to be bound with the colonel's honour. This at length he obtained, and then departed well satisfied.

In fact, the colonel was ashamed to avow the real cause of the quarrel to this good man, or indeed to his brother Bath, who would not only have condemned him equally with the doctor, but would possibly have quarrelled with him on his sister's account; whom, as the reader must have observed, he loved above all things: and in plain truth, though the colonel was a brave man, and dared to fight, yet he was altogether as willing to let it alone; and this made him now and then give a little way to the wrong-headedness of Colonel Bath, who, with all the other principles of honour and humanity, made no more of cutting the throat of a man upon any of his punctilios, than a butcher doth of killing sheep.

CHAP. V.

What passed at the Bailiff's House.

THE doctor now set forwards to his friend Booth, and as he passed by the door of his attorney in the way, he called upon him, and took him with him.

The meeting between him and Booth need not be expatiated upon. The doctor was really angry, and though he deferred his lecture to a more proper opportunity, yet, as he was no dissembler, (indeed he was incapable of any disguise) he could not put on a show of that heartiness with which he had formerly used to receive his friend.

Booth at last began himself in the following manner---'Doctor, I am really ashamed to see you; and if 'you knew the confusion of my soul on this occasion, I 'am sure you would pity rather than upbraid me. 'And yet I can say, with great sincerity, I rejoice in 'this last instance of my shame, since I am like to 'reap the most solid advantage from it.' The doctor stared at this, and Booth thus proceeded---'Since I 'have been in this wretched place, I have employed

'my

'my time almost entirely in reading over a series of 'sermons, which are contained in that book,' (meaning Dr. Barrow's works, which then lay on the table before him) 'in proof of the Christian religion; and so good 'an effect have they had upon me, that I shall, I 'believe, be the better man for them as long as I 'live. I have not a doubt, (for I own I have had 'such) which remains now unsatisfied. If ever an 'angel might be thought to guide the pen of a writer, 'surely the pen of that great and good man had such an 'assistant.' The doctor readily concurred in the praises of Dr. Barrow, and added---'You say, you have had 'your doubts, young gentleman; indeed, I did not 'know that: and pray what were your doubts?'---'Whatever they were, Sir,' said Booth, 'they are now 'satisfied, as I believe those of every impartial and sen-'sible reader will be, if he will with due attention read 'over these excellent sermons.'---'Very well,' answered the doctor; 'though I have conversed, I find, with a 'false brother hitherto, I am glad you are reconciled 'to truth at last, and I hope your future faith will 'have some influence on your future life.'---'I need 'not tell you, Sir,' replied Booth, 'that will always be 'the case, where faith is sincere, as I assure you mine 'is. Indeed, I never was a rash disbeliever; my chief 'doubt was founded on this, that as men appeared to 'me to act entirely from their passions, their actions 'could have neither merit nor demerit.'---'A very wor-'thy conclusion truly!' cries the doctor; 'but if men act, 'as I believe they do, from their passions, it would be 'fair to conclude that religion to be true, which 'applies immediately to the strongest of these passions, 'hope and fear; chusing rather to rely on its rewards 'and punishments, than on that native beauty of virtue 'which some of the ancient philosophers thought pro-'per to recommend to their disciples. But we will 'defer this discourse till another opportunity; at pre-'sent, as the devil hath thought proper to set you free,

'I will

'I will try if I can prevail on the bailiff to do the 'same.'

The doctor had really not so much money in town as Booth's debt amounted to; and therefore, though he would otherwise very willingly have paid it, he was forced to give bail for the action. For which purpose, as the bailiff was a man of great form, he was obliged to get another person to be bound with him. This person, however, the attorney undertook to procure, and immediately set out in quest of him.

During his absence the bailiff came into the room, and addressing himself to the doctor, said---'I think, 'Sir, your name is Dr. Harrison.' The doctor immediately acknowledged his name. Indeed, the bailiff had seen it to a bail bond before. 'Why then, Sir,' said the bailiff, 'there is a man above in a dying condition, 'that desires the favour of speaking to you; I believe 'he wants you to pray by him.'

The bailiff himself was not more ready to execute his office on all occasions for his fee, than the doctor was to execute his for nothing. Without making any farther enquiry, therefore, into the condition of the man, he immediately went up stairs.

As soon as the bailiff returned down stairs, which was immediately after he had lodged the doctor in the room, Booth had the curiosity to ask him who this man was. 'Why, I do not know much of him,' said the bailiff. 'I had him once in custody before now; I remember 'it was when your honour was here last; and now I 'remember too, he said, then, he knew your honour very 'well. Indeed, I had some opinion of him at that time; 'for he spent his money very much like a gentleman; 'but I have discovered since, that he is a poor fellow, 'and worth nothing. He is a mere shy cock. I have 'had the stuff about me this week, and could never get 'at him till this morning: nay, I do not believe we 'should have ever found out his lodgings, had it not 'been for the attorney that was here just now, who

'gave

'gave us information. And so we took him this 'morning by a comical way enough. For we dressed 'up one of my men in women's clothes, who told 'the people of the house, that he was his sister just 'come to town; for we were told by the attorney that 'he had such a sister; upon which he was let up stairs, 'and so kept the door ajar till I and another rushed in. 'Let me tell you, captain, there are as good strata-'gems made use of in our business as any in the 'army.'

'But pray, Sir,' said Booth, 'did you not tell me 'this morning that the poor fellow was desperately 'wounded; nay, I think you told the doctor that he 'was a dying man.'

'I had like to have forgot that,' cries the bailiff. 'Nothing would serve the gentleman, but that he must 'make resistance, and he gave my man a blow with a 'stick, but I soon quieted him, by giving him a wipe 'or two with a hanger. Not that I believe I have 'done his business neither; but the fellow is faint-'hearted, and the surgeon, I fancy, frightens him more 'than he need. But, however, let the worst come to 'the worst, the law is all on my side, and it is only '*se fendendo*. The attorney that was here just now 'told me so, and bid me fear nothing: for that he 'would stand my friend, and undertake the cause; 'he is a devilish good one at a defence at the Old 'Bailey, I promise you. I have known him bring off 'several that every one thought would have been 'hanged.'

'But suppose you should be acquitted,' said Booth, 'would not the blood of this poor wretch lie a little 'heavy at your heart?'

'Why should it, captain?' said the bailiff. 'Is 'it not all done in a lawful way? why will people 'resist the law, when they know the consequence? 'To be sure, if a man was to kill another in an unlawful 'manner as it were, and what the law calls murder,

'that

'that is quite and clear another thing. I should not 'care to be convicted of murder any more than another 'man. Why, now, captain, you have been abroad in 'the wars, they tell me, and to be sure must have 'killed men in your time. Pray, was you ever afraid 'afterwards of seeing their ghosts?'

'That is a different affair,' cries Booth; but I 'would not kill a man in cold blood for all the world.'

'There is no difference at all, as I can see,' cries the bailiff. 'One is as much in the way of business 'as the other! When gentlemen behave themselves 'like unto gentlemen, I know how to treat them as 'such as well as any officer the king hath. And when 'they do not, why, they must take what follows, and 'the law doth not call it murder.'

Booth very clearly saw the bailiff had squared his conscience exactly according to law, and that he could not easily subvert his way of thinking. He therefore gave up the cause, and desired the bailiff to expedite the bonds, which he promised to do, saying he hoped he had used him with proper civility this time, if he had not the last, and that he should be remembered for it.

But before we close this chapter, we shall endeavour to satisfy an enquiry which may arise in our most favourite readers (for so are the most curious) how it came to pass that such a parson as was Doctor Harrison should employ such a fellow as this Murphy.

The case then was thus. This Murphy had been clerk to an attorney in the very same town in which the doctor lived, and when he was out of his time, had set up with a character fair enough, and married a maid servant of Mrs. Harris, by which means he had all the business to which that lady and her friends, in which number was the doctor, could recommend him.

Murphy went on with his business, and thrived very well, till he happened to make an unfortunate slip, in which he was detected by a brother of the same calling. But though we call this by the gentle name of a slip, in respect

respect to it's being so extremely common, it was a matter on which the law, if it had ever come to its ears, would have passed a very severe censure; being, indeed, no less than perjury and subornation of perjury.

This brother attorney, being a very good-natured man, and unwilling to bespatter his own profession, and considering, perhaps, that the consequence did in no wise affect the public, who had no manner of interest in the alternative, whether A. in whom the right was, or B. to whom Mr. Murphy, by the means aforesaid, had transferred it, succeded in an action.---We mention this particular, because, as this brother attorney was a very violent party man, and a professed stickler for the public, to suffer any injury to have been done to that, would have been highly inconsistent with his principles.

This gentleman, therefore, came to Mr. Murphy, and after shewing him that he had it in his power to convict him of the aforesaid crime, very generously told him, that he had not the least delight in bringing any man to destruction, nor the least animosity against him. All that he insisted upon was, that he would not live in the same town or country with one who had been guilty of such an action. He then told Mr. Murphy that he would keep the secret on two conditions; the one was, that he immediately quitted that country; the other was, that he should convince him he deserved his kindness by his gratitude, and that Murphy should transfer to the other all the business which he then had in those parts, and to which he could possibly recommend him.

It is the observation of a very wise man, that it is a very common exercise of wisdom in this world, of two evils to chuse the least. The reader therefore cannot doubt but that Mr. Murphy complied with the alternative proposed by this kind brother, and accepted the terms on which secresy was to be obtained.

This happened while the doctor was abroad; and with

with all this, except the departure of Mr. Murphy, not only the doctor, but the whole town, (save his aforesaid brother alone) were to this day unacquainted.

The doctor, at his return, hearing that Mr. Murphy was gone, applied to the other attorney in his affairs, who still employed this Murphy as his agent in town, partly perhaps out of good will to him, and partly upon the recommendation of Miss Harris; for as he had married a servant of the family, and a particular favourite of her's, there can be no wonder that she, who was entirely ignorant of the affair above related, as well as of his conduct in town, should continue her favour to him. It will appear, therefore, I apprehend, no longer strange, that the doctor, who had seen this man but three times since his removal to town, and then conversed with him only on business, should remain as ignorant of his life and character, as a man generally is of the character of the hackney-coachman who drives him. Nor doth it reflect more on the honour or understanding of the doctor under these circumstances to employ Murphy, than it would if he had been driven about the town by a thief or a murderer.

CHAP. VI.

What passed between the Doctor and the Sick Man.

WE left the doctor in the last chapter with the wounded man, to whom the doctor, in a very gentle voice, spoke as follows:

'I am sorry, friend, to see you in this situation, and 'am very ready to give you any comfort or assistance 'within my power.'

'I thank you kindly, doctor,' said the man. 'Indeed, I should not have presumed to have sent to you, 'had I not known your character; for though I 'believe I am not at all known to you, I have lived 'many years in that town where you yourself had a 'house. My name is Robinson. I used to write for 'the attornies in those parts, and I have been employed 'on your business in my time.'

'I do'

'I do not recollect you, nor your name,' said the doctor: 'but consider, friend, your moments are precious, and your business, as I am informed, is to offer up your prayers to that Great Being, before whom you are shortly to appear. But first, let me exhort you earnestly to a most serious repentance of all your sins.'

'Oh! doctor,' said the man, 'Pray what is your opinion of a death-bed repentance?'

'If repentance is sincere,' cries the doctor, 'I hope, through the mercies and merits of our most powerful and benign Intercessor, it will never come too late.'

'But do not you think, Sir,' cries the man, 'that in order to obtain forgiveness of any great sin we have committed by an injury done to our neighbours, it is necessary, as far as in us lies, to make all the amends we can to the party injured, and to undo, if possible, the injury we have done.'

'Most undoubtedly,' cries the doctor; 'our pretence to repentance would otherwise be gross hypocrisy, and an impudent attempt to deceive and impose upon our Creator himself.'

'Indeed, I am of the same opinion,' cries the penitent; and I think farther, that this is thrown in my way, and hinted to me by that Great Being; for an accident happened to me yesterday, by which, as things have fallen out since, I think I plainly discern the hand of Providence. I went yesterday, Sir, you must know, to a pawnbroker's, to pawn the last moveable which, except the poor clothes you see on my back, I am worth in the world. While I was there, a young lady came in, to pawn her picture. She had disguised herself so much, and pulled her hood so over her face, that I did not know her while she staid, which was scarce three minutes. As soon as she was gone, the pawnbroker taking the picture in his hand, cried out, "Upon my word, this is

"the handſomeſt face I ever ſaw in my life." I deſired 'him to let me look on the picture, which he readily 'did, and I no ſooner caſt my eyes upon it, than the 'ſtrong reſemblance ſtruck me, and I knew it to be 'Mrs. Booth.'

'Mrs. Booth! what Mrs. Booth?' cries the doctor.

'Captain Booth's lady; the captain who is now 'below,' ſaid the other.

'How! cries the doctor, with great impetuoſity.

'Have patience,' ſaid the man, 'and you ſhall hear 'all. I expreſſed ſome ſurprize to the pawnbroker, 'and aſked the lady's name. He anſwered, that he 'knew not her name, but that ſhe was ſome undone 'wretch, who had the day before left all her clothes 'with him in pawn. My guilt immediately flew in 'my face, and told me, I had been acceſſary to this 'lady's undoing. The ſudden ſhock ſo affected me, 'that, had it not been for a dram, which the pawn-'broker gave me, I believe, I ſhould have died on 'the ſpot.'

'Acceſſary to her undoing! how acceſſary?' ſaid the doctor. 'Pray tell me; for I am impatient to 'hear.'

'I will tell you all, as faſt as I can,' cries the ſick man. 'You know, good doctor, that Mrs. Harris of 'our town had two daughters, this Mrs. Booth, and 'another. Now, Sir, it ſeems the other daughter had 'ſome way or other diſobliged her mother, a little 'before the old lady died, therefore ſhe made a will, 'and left all her fortune, except one thouſand pounds, 'to Mrs Booth; to which will Mr. Murphy, myſelf, 'and another who is now dead, were the witneſſes. Mrs. 'Harris afterwards died ſuddenly; upon which it was 'contrived, by her other daughter and Mr. Murphy, 'to make a new will, in which Mrs. Booth had a 'legacy of ten pounds, and all the reſt was given to the 'other. To this will, Murphy, myſelf, and the ſame 'third perſon, again ſet our hands.'

'Good

'Good Heaven! how wonderful is thy providence!' cries the doctor. 'Murphy, say you?'

'He himself, Sir,' answed Robinson: 'Murphy, who is the greatest rogue, I believe, now in the world.'

'Pray, Sir, proceed,' cries the doctor.

'For this service, Sir,' said Robinson, 'myself and the third person, one Carter, received two hundred pounds each. What reward Murphy himself had, I know not. Carter died soon afterwards; and from that time, at several payments, I have by threats extorted above a hundred pounds more. And this, Sir, is the whole truth, which I am ready to testify, if it would please Heaven to prolong my life.'

'I hope it will,' cries the doctor; 'but something must be done for fear of accident---I will send to council immediately, to know how to secure your testimony. Whom can I get to send?---Stay, aye---he will do---but I know not where his house or his chambers are---I will go myself---But I may be wanted here.'

While the doctor was in this violent agitation, the surgeon made his appearance. The doctor stood still in a meditating posture, while the surgeon examined his patient. After which the doctor begged him to declare his opinion, and whether he thought the wounded man in any immediate danger of death. 'I do not know,' answered the surgeon, 'what you call immediate. He may live several days; nay, he may recover. It is impossible to give any certain opinion in these cases. He then launched forth into a set of terms, which, the doctor, with all his scholarship, could not understand.' To say the truth, many of them were not to be found in any dictionary or lexicon.

One discovery however the doctor made, and that was, that the surgeon was a very ignorant, conceited fellow, and knew nothing of his profession. He resolved therefore to get better advice for the sick; but this he postponed at present, and applying himself to

the ſurgeon, ſaid he ſhould be very much obliged to him, if he knew where to find ſuch a counſellor, and would fetch him thither. 'I would not aſk ſuch a 'favour of you, Sir,' ſays the doctor, 'if it was not 'buſineſs of the laſt importance, or if I could find any 'other meſſenger.'

'I fetch, Sir!' ſaid the ſurgeon very angrily. 'Do 'you take me for a footman or a porter? I do not 'know who you are; but I believe you are full as 'proper to go on ſuch an errand as I am:' (for as the doctor, who was juſt come off his journey, was very roughly dreſſed, the ſurgeon held him in no great reſpect.) The ſurgeon then called aloud from the top of the ſtairs, 'Let my coachman draw up?' and ſtrutted off without any ceremony, telling his patient he would call again the next day.

At this very inſtant arrived Murphy with the other bail, and finding Booth alone, he aſked the bailiff at the door, what was become of the doctor: 'Why, the 'doctor,' anſwered he, 'is above ſtairs, praying with '-----,' 'How!' cries Murphy. 'How came you not 'to carry him directly to Newgate, as you promiſed 'me?---' 'Why, becauſe he was wounded,' cries the bailiff. 'I thought it was a charity to take care 'of him; and beſides why ſhould one make more 'noiſe about the matter than is neceſſary?---' 'And 'Dr. Harriſon with him?' ſaid Murphy. 'Yes, he is,' ſaid the bailiff: 'he deſired to ſpeak with the doctor 'very much, and they have been praying together 'almoſt this hour.'---'All is up, and undone,' cries Murphy. 'Let me come by, I have thought on ſome'thing which I muſt do immediately.'

Now as by means of the ſurgeon's leaving the door open, the doctor heard Murphy's voice naming Robinſon peeviſhly, he drew ſoftly to the top of the ſtairs, where he heard the foregoing dialogue; and as ſoon as Murphy had uttered his laſt words, and was moving downwards, the doctor immediately ſallied from his

poſt,

poſt, running as faſt as he could, and crying, 'Stop 'the villain! ſtop the thief!'

The attorney wanted no better hint to accelerate his pace; and having the ſtart of the doctor, got down ſtairs, and out into the ſtreet; but the doctor was ſo cloſe to his heels, and being in foot the nimbler of the two, he ſoon overtook him, and laid hold of him, as he would have done on either Broughton or Slack in the ſame cauſe.

This action in the ſtreet, accompanied with the frequent cry of 'Stop thief!' by the doctor, during the chace, preſently drew together a large mob, who began as is uſual, to enter immediately upon buſineſs, and to make ſtrict enquiry into the matter, in order to proceed to juſtice in their ſummary way.

Murphy, who knew well the temper of the mob, cried out, 'If you are a bailiff, ſhew me your writ.--- 'Gentlemen, he pretends to arreſt me here without a 'writ.'

Upon this, one of the ſturdieſt and forwardeſt of the mob, and who, by a ſuperior ſtrength of body and of lungs, preſided in this aſſembly, declared he would ſuffer no ſuch thing. 'D---n me,' ſays he, 'away to 'the pump with the catchpole directly; ſhew me your 'writ, or let the gentleman go; you ſhall not arreſt a 'man contrary to law.'

He then laid his hands on the doctor, who ſtill faſt griping the attorney, cried out, 'He is a villain! I am 'no bailiff, but a clergyman; and this lawyer is guilty 'of forgery, and hath ruined a poor family.'

'How! cries the ſpokeſman; 'a lawyer; that alters 'the caſe---'

'Yes, faith,' cries another of the mob, 'it is Law-'yer Murphy. I know him very well.'

'And hath he ruined a poor family? Like enough, 'faith, if he is a lawyer. Away with him to the juſ-'tice immediately.'

The bailiff now came up, deſiring to know what

 was

was the matter; to whom Doctor Harrifon anfwered, that he had arrefted that villain for forgery. 'How 'can you arreft him,' cries the bailiff, 'you are no 'officer, nor have any warrant? Mr. Murphy is a 'gentleman, and he fhall be ufed as fuch.'

'Nay, to be fure,' cries the fpokefman, 'there ought 'to be a warrant; that's the truth on't.'

'There needs no warrant,' cries the doctor, 'I 'accufe him of felony; and I know fo much of the 'law of England, that any man may arreft a felon with-'out any warrant whatever. This villain hath undone 'a poor family; and I will die on the fpot before I part 'with him.'

'If the law be fo,' cries the orator, 'that is another 'matter. And to be fure, to ruin a poor man is the 'greateft of fins. And being a lawyer too, makes it 'much the worfe. He fhall go before a juftice; d---n 'me, if he fhan't go before the juftice. I fays the 'word he fhall.'

'I fay he is a gentleman, and fhall be ufed according 'to law,' cries the bailiff. 'And though you are a 'clergyman,' faid he to Doctor Harrifon, 'you do not 'fhew yourfelf as one by your actions.'

'That's a bailiff,' cries one of the mob; 'one law-'yer will always ftand by another; but I think the 'clergyman is a very good man, and acts becoming a 'clergyman to ftand by the poor.'

At which words the mob all gave a great fhout; and feveral cried out, 'Bring him along; away with 'him to the juftice.'

And now a conftable appeared, and with an authorita-tive voice, declared what he was, produced his ftaff, and demanded the peace.

The doctor then delivered his prifoner over to the officer, and charged him with felony; the conftable received him; the attorney fubmitted; the bailiff was hufhed; and the waves of the mob inftantly fubfided.

The doctor now balanced with himfelf how he fhould

pro-

proceed; at last he determined to leave Booth a little longer in captivity, and not quit sight of Murphy, before he had lodged him safe with a magistrate. They then all moved forwards to the justice: the constable and his prisoner marching first, the doctor and the bailiff following next, and about five thousand mob, (for no less number were assembled in a very few minutes) following the procession.

They found the magistrate just sitting down to his dinner: however, when he was acquainted with the doctor's profession, he immediately admitted him, and heard his business. Which he no sooner perfectly understood, with all it's circumstances, than he resolved, though it was then very late, and he had been fatigued all the morning with public business, to postpone all refreshment till he had discharged his duty. He accordingly adjourned the prisoner and his cause to the bailiff's house, whither himself with the doctor immediately repaired, and whither the attorney was followed by a much larger number of attendants than he had been honoured with before.

CHAP. VII.

In which the History draws towards to a Conclusion.

NOTHING could exceed the astonishment of Booth at the behaviour of the doctor at the time when he sallied forth in pursuit of the attorney; for which it was so impossible for him to account in any manner whatever. He remained a long time in the utmost torture of mind, till at last the bailiff's wife came to him, and asked him if the doctor was not a madman; and in truth he could hardly defend him from that imputation.

While he was in this perplexity, the maid of the house brought him a message from Robinson, desiring the favour of seeing him above stairs. With this he immediately complied.

When these two were alone together; and the key turned on them, (for the bailiff's wife was a most careful

ful person, and never omitted that ceremony in the absence of her husband, having always at her tongue's end that excellent proverb of 'Safe bind, safe find;') Robinson, looking stedfastly upon Booth, said, 'I 'believe, Sir, you scarce remember me.'

Booth answered, that he thought he had seen his face somewhere before; but could not then recollect when or where.

'Indeed, Sir, answered the man, it was a place 'which no man can remember with pleasure. But do 'you not remember, a few weeks ago, that you had 'the misfortune to be in a certain prison in this town, 'where you lost a trifling sum at cards to a fellow pri-'soner?'

This hint sufficiently awakened Booth's memory, and he now recollected the features of his old friend Robinson. He answered him a little surlily 'I know 'you now very well: but I did not imagine you 'would ever have reminded me of that transaction.

'Alas, Sir!' answered Robinson, 'whatever hap-'pened then was very trifling compared to the injuries 'I have done you; but if my life be spared long 'enough, I will now undo it all; and as I have been 'one of your worst enemies, I will be now one of your 'best friends.'

He was just entering upon his story, when a noise was heard below, which might be almost compared to what hath been heard in Holland, when the dykes have given way, and the ocean in an inundation breaks in upon the land. It seemed indeed as if the whole world was bursting into the house at once.

Booth was a man of great firmness of mind, and he had need of it all at this instant. As for poor Robinson, the usual concomitants of guilt attended him, and he began to tremble in a violent manner.

The first person who ascended the stairs was the doctor; who no sooner saw Booth, than he ran to him, and embraced him, crying, 'My child, I wish you joy with 'all

'all my heart. Your ſufferings are all at an end; and 'Providence hath done you the juſtice at laſt, which it 'will one day or other render to all men. You will 'hear all preſently; but I can now only tell you, that 'your ſiſter is diſcovered, and the eſtate is your own.'

Booth was in ſuch confuſion, that he ſcarce made any anſwer; and now appeared the juſtice and his clerk, and immediately afterwards the conſtable with his priſoner, the bailiff, and as many more as could poſſibly croud up ſtairs.

The doctor now addreſſed himſelf to the ſick man, and deſired him to repeat the ſame information before the juſtice which he had made already; to which Robinſon readily conſented.

While the clerk was taking down the information, the attorney expreſſed a very impatient deſire to ſend inſtantly for his clerk; and expreſſed ſo much uneaſineſs at the confuſion in which he had left his papers at home, that a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to the doctor, that, if his houſe was ſearched, ſome lights and evidence relating to this affair would certainly be found; he therefore deſired the juſtice to grant a ſearch-warrant immediately to ſearch his houſe.

The juſtice anſwered that he had no ſuch power. That if there was any ſuſpicion of ſtolen goods, he could grant a warrant to ſearch for them.

'How, Sir!' ſaid the doctor, 'can you grant a warrant to ſearch a man's houſe for a ſilver tea-ſpoon, and 'not in a caſe like this, where a man is robbed of his 'whole eſtate?'

'Hold, Sir!' ſays the ſick man, 'I believe I can 'anſwer that point; for I can ſwear he hath ſeveral title deeds of the eſtate now in his poſſeſſion, which 'I am ſure were ſtolen from the right owner.'

The juſtice ſtill heſitated. He ſaid title deeds ſavoured of the reality, and it was not felony to ſteal them. If, indeed, they were taken away in a box, then it would be felony to ſteal the box.

'Savour

'Savour of the reality! savour of the fartality!' said the doctor. 'I never heard such incomprehensible 'nonsense. This is impudent as well as childish, 'trifling with the lives and properties of men!'

'Well, Sir,' said Robinson, 'I now am sure I can 'do his business; for I know he hath a silver cup in 'his possession, which is the property of this gentle-'man (meaning Booth), and how he got it but by 'stealth, let him account if he can.'

'That will do,' cries the justice with great pleasure. 'That will do; and if you will charge him on your 'oath with that, I will instantly grant my warrant to 'search his house for it.—'And I will go and see it 'executed,' cries the doctor. For it was a maxim of his, that no man could descend below himself in doing any act which may contribute to protect an innocent person, or to bring a rogue to the gallows.

The oath was instantly taken, the warrant signed, and the doctor attended the constable in the execution of it.

The clerk then proceeded in taking the information of Robinson, and had just finished it, when the doctor returned with the utmost joy in his countenance, and declared that he had sufficient evidence of the fact in his possession. He had indeed two or three letters from Miss Harris, in answer to the attorney's frequent demands of money for secresy, that fully explained the whole villainy.

The justice now asked the prisoner what he had to say for himself, or whether he chose to say any thing in his own defence.

'Sir,' said the attorney with great confidence, 'I am 'not to defend myself here. It will be of no service 'to me; for I know you neither can nor will discharge 'me. But I am extremely innocent of all this matter, 'as I doubt not but to make appear to the satisfaction 'of a court of justice.'

The legal previous ceremonies were then gone through of

of binding over the profecutor, &c. and then the attorney was committed to Newgate: whither he was efcorted amidft the acclamations of the populace.

When Murphy was departed, and a little calm reftored in the houfe, the juftice made his compliments of congratulation to Booth; who, as well as he could in his prefent tumult of joy, returned his thanks to both the magiftrate and the doctor. They were now all preparing to depart, when Mr. Bondum ftept up to Booth, and faid, 'Hold, Sir, you have forgot one thing; 'you have not given bail yet.'

This occafioned fome diftrefs at this time; for the attorney's friend was departed; but when the juftice heard this, he immediately offered himfelf as the other bondfman. And thus ended the affair.

It was now paft fix o'clock, and none of the gentlemen had yet dined. They very readily therefore accepted the magiftrate's invitation, and went all together to his houfe.

And now the very firft thing that was done, even before they fat down to dinner, was to difpatch a meffenger to one of the beft furgeons in town, to take care of Robinfon; and another meffenger to Booth's lodgings, to prevent Amelia's concern at their ftaying fo long.

The latter, however was to little purpofe; for Amelia's patience had been worn out before, and fhe had taken a hackney coach, and driven to the bailiff's where fhe arrived a little after the departure of her hufband, and was thence directed to the juftice's.

Though there was no kind of reafon for Amelia's fright at hearing that her hufband and Doctor Harrifon were gone before the juftice; and though fhe indeed imagined that they were there in the light of complainants, not of offenders; yet fo tender were her fears for her hufband, and fo much had her gentle fpirits been lately agitated, that fhe had a thoufand apprehenfions of fhe knew not what. When fhe arrived therefore at

the

the house, she ran directly into the room, where all the company were at dinner, scarce knowing what she did, or whither she was going.

She found her husband in such a situation, and discovered such chearfulness in his countenance, that so violent a turn was given to her spirits, that she was just able, with the assistance of a glass of water, to support herself. She soon, however, recovered her calmness, and in a little time began to eat what might indeed be almost called her breakfast.

The justice now wished her joy of what had happened that day; for which she kindly thanked him, apprehending he meant the liberty of her husband. His worship might perhaps have explained himself more largely, had not the doctor given him a timely wink; for this wise and good man was fearful of making such a discovery all at once to Amelia, lest it should over-power her; and luckily the justice's wife was not well enough acquainted with the matter to say any thing more on it than barely to assure the lady that she joined in her husband's congratulation.

Amelia was then in a clean white gown which she had that day redeemed, and was, indeed, dressed all over with great neatness and exactness; with the glow therefore which arose in her features from finding her husband released from his captivity, she made so charming a figure, that she attracted the eyes of the magistrate and of his wife; and they both agreed, when they were alone, that they had never seen so charming a creature; nay, Booth himself afterwards told her, that he scarce ever remembered her to look so extremely beautiful as she did that evening.

Whether Amelia's beauty, or the reflection on the remarkable act of justice he had performed, or whatever motive filled the magistrate with extraordinary good-humour, and opened his heart and cellars, I will not determine; but he gave them so hearty a welcome, and they were all so pleased with each other, that Amelia,

for

for that one night, trusted the care of her children to the woman where they lodged, nor did the company rise from table till the clock struck eleven.

They then separated. Amelia and Booth, having been set down at their lodgings, retired into each other's arms; nor did Booth that evening, by the doctor's advice, mention one word of the grand affair to his wife.

CHAP. VIII.

Thus this History draws nearer to a Conclusion.

IN the morning early Amelia received the following letter from Mrs. Atkinson.

'THE surgeon of the regiment to which the captain my husband lately belonged, and who came this evening to see the captain, hath almost frightened me out of my wits, by a strange story of your husband being committed to prison by a justice of peace for forgery. For Heaven's sake, send me the truth. If my husband can be of any service, weak as he is, he will be carried in a chair to serve a brother officer, for whom he hath a regard, which I need not mention. Or if the sum of twenty pounds will be of any service to you, I will wait upon you with it the moment I can get my cloaths on, the morning you receive this; for it is too late to send to night. The captain begs his hearty service and respects; and believe me, dear Madam, your ever affectionate friend, and humble servant,

'F. ATKINSON.'

When Amelia read this letter to Booth, they were both equally surprized, she at the commitment for forgery, and he at seeing such a letter from Mrs. Atkinson; for he was a stranger yet to the reconciliation that had happened.

Booth's doubts were first satisfied by Amelia, from which he received great affection and fondness for Mr. Atkinson, who, indeed, so well deserved it. 'Well, my dear,' said he to Amelia, smiling, 'shall we accept this generous offer?'

 'O fye!

'O fye! no certainly;' answered she.

'Why not;' cries Booth: 'it is but a trifle: and 'yet it will be of great service to us?'

'But consider, my dear,' said she, 'how ill these 'poor people can spare it.'

'They can spare it for a little while,' said Booth; 'and we shall soon pay it them again.'

'When, my dear?' said Amelia. 'Do, my dear 'Will, consider our wretched circumstances. I beg 'you let us go into the country immediately, and live 'upon bread and water, till fortune pleases to smile 'upon us.'

'I am convinced that day is not far off,' said Booth. 'However, give me leave to send an answer to Mrs. 'Atkinson, that we shall be glad of her company im'mediately to breakfast.'

'You know I never contradict you,' said she; 'but 'I assure you it is contrary to my inclinations to 'take this money.'

'Well, suffer me,' cries he, 'to act this once con'trary to your inclinations.' He then writ a short note to Mrs. Atkinson, and dispatched it away immediately: which when he had done, Amelia said---'I 'shall be glad of Mrs. Atkinson's company to break'fast; but yet I wish you would oblige me in refusing 'this money. Take five guineas only. That is, in'deed such a sum as, if we never should pay it, would 'sit light on my mind. The last persons in the world 'from whom I would receive favours of that sort, are 'the poor and generous.'

'You can receive favours only from the generous,' cries Booth: 'and to be plain with you, there are 'very few who are generous, that are not poor.'

'What think you,' said she, 'of Dr. Harrison?'

'I do assure you,' said Booth, 'he is far from be'ing rich. The doctor hath an income of little more 'than six hundred pounds a year; and I am convinced 'he gives away four of it. Indeed, he is one of the

'best

'best œconomists in the world: but yet I am positive 'he never was at any time possessed of five hundred 'pounds since he hath been a man. Consider, dear 'Emily, the late obligations we have to this gen-'tleman; it would be unreasonable to expect more, at 'least at present? my half-pay is mortgaged for a year 'to come. How then shall we live?'

'By our labour,' answered she. 'I am able to la-'bour, and I am sure I am not ashamed of it.'

'And do you really think you can support such a 'life?'

'I am sure I could be happy in it,' answered Amelia. 'And why not I, as well as a thousand others, 'who have not the happiness of such a husband to make 'life delicious? why should I complain of my hard 'fate, while many, who are much poorer than I, enjoy 'theirs? Am I of a superior rank of being to the wife 'of the honest labourer? am I not partaker of one 'common nature with her?'

'My angel,' cries Booth, 'it delights me to hear 'you talk thus, and for a reason you little guess; for 'I am assured that one who can so heroically endure 'adversity, will bear prosperity with equal greatness 'of soul; for the mind that cannot be dejected by the 'former, is not likely to be transported with the lat-'ter.'

'If it had pleased Heaven,' cried she, 'to have tried 'me, I think, at least hope, I should have preserved 'my humility.'

'Then, my dear,' said he, 'I will relate you a dream 'I had last night. You know, you lately mentioned 'a dream of yours.'

'Do so,' said she; 'I am attentive.'

'I dreamed,' said he, 'this night, that we were in 'the most miserable situation imaginable. Indeed, in 'the situation we were yesterday morning, or rather 'worse; that I was laid in a prison for debt, and that 'you wanted a morsel of bread to feed the mouths of

'your hungry children. At length (for nothing, you 'know, is quicker than the tranſition in dreams) Dr. 'Harriſon, methought, came to me, with chearfulneſs 'and joy in his countenance. The priſon-doors imme-'diately flew open; and Dr. Harriſon introduced you, 'gayly, though not richly, dreſſed. That you gently 'chid me for ſtaying ſo long; all on a ſudden appeared 'a coach with four horſes to it, in which was a maid-'ſervant with our two children. We both immedi-'ately went into the coach, and taking our leave of the 'doctor, ſet out towards your country-houſe; for 'yours I dreamed it was. I only aſk you now, if this 'was real, and the tranſition almoſt as ſudden, could 'you ſupport it?'

Amelia was going to anſwer, when Mrs. Atkinſon came into the room; and, after a very little previous ceremony, preſented Booth with a bank-note, which he received of her, ſaying, he would very ſoon repay it: a promiſe that a little offended Amelia, as ſhe thought he had no chance of keeping it.

The doctor preſently arrived, and the company ſat down to breakfaſt, during which Mrs. Atkinſon entertained them with the hiſtory of the doctors that had attended her huſband, by whoſe advice Atkinſon was recovered from every thing but the weakneſs which his diſtemper had occaſioned.

When the tea-table was removed, Booth told the doctor that he had acquainted his wife with a dream he had laſt night. 'I dreamed, doctor,' ſaid he, that ſhe 'was reſtored to her eſtate.'

'Very well,' ſaid the doctor, 'and if I am to be 'the Oniropolis, I believe the dream will come to paſs. 'To ſay the truth, I have rather a better opinion of 'dreams than Horace had. Old Homer ſays, they 'came from Jupiter; and as to your dream, I have 'often had it in my waking thoughts, that ſome time 'or other that roguery (for ſo I was always convinced 'it was) would be brought to light:---for the ſame

'Homer

'Homer fays, as you, Madam,' (meaning Mrs. Atkinfon) 'very well know---

Εἴπερ γάρ τε καὶ αὐτίκ' Ὀλύμπιος οὐκ ἐτέλεσσεν,
Ἔκ τε καὶ ὀψὲ τελεῖ· σύν τε μεγάλῳ ἀπέτισαν
Σὺν σφῇσιν κεφαλῇσι, γυναιξί τε καὶ τεκέεσσιν.'*

'I have no Greek ears, Sir,' faid Mrs. Atkinfon. 'I believe I could underftand it in the Delphin Homer.'

'I wifh,' cries he, 'my dear child,' (to Amelia) 'you would read a little in the Delphin Ariftotle, or elfe in fome chriftian divine, to learn a doctrine which you will one day have a ufe for. I mean, to bear the hardeft of all human conflicts, and fupport with an even temper, and without any violent tranfports of mind, a fudden guft of profperity.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'I fhould almoft think my hufband and you, doctor, had fome very good news to tell me, by your ufing, both of you, the fame introduction. As far as I know myfelf, I think I can anfwer, I can fupport any degree of profperity; and I think I yefterday fhewed I could: for I do affure you, it is not in the power of fortune to try me with fuch another tranfition from grief to joy, as I conceived from feeing my hufband in prifon and at liberty.'

'Well, you are a good girl,' cries the doctor, 'and after I have put on my fpectacles, I will try you.'

The doctor then took out a newfpaper, and read as follows---

"Yefterday one Murphy, an eminent attorney at law, was committed to Newgate, for the forgery of a will, under which an eftate had been for many years detained from the right owner."

* If Jupiter doth not immediately execute his vengeance, he will however execute it at laft; and their tranfgreffions fhall fall heavily on their own heads, and on their wives and children.

'Now in this paragraph there is something very re-'markable, and that is---that it is true: but *opus est* '*explanatum*. In the Delphin edition of this newspa-'per, there is the following note upon the words *right* '*owner*---" The right owner of this estate is a young " lady of the highest merit, whose maiden name was " Harris, and who some time since was married to an " idle fellow, one Lieutenant Booth. And the best " historians assure us, that letters from the elder sister " of this lady, which manifestly prove the forgery, and " clear up the whole affair, are in the hands of an old " parson, called Dr. Harrison."

'And is this really true!' cries Amelia.

'Yes, really and sincerely,' cries the doctor; 'the 'whole estate: for your mother left it you all, and it 'is as surely yours, as if you was already in posses-'sion.'

'Gracious Heaven,' cries she, falling on her knees, 'I thank you!' And then starting up, she ran to her husband, and embracing him, cried---'My dear love, 'I wish you joy! and I ought in gratitude to wish it 'you; for you are the cause of mine. It is upon 'yours, and my children's account, that I principally 'rejoice.'

Mrs. Atkinson rose from her chair, and jumped about the room for joy, repeating---

Turne, quod optanti divum promittere nemo
Auderat, volvenda dies, en, attulit ultro.†

Amelia now threw herself into a chair, complained she was a little faint, and begged a glass of water. The doctor advised her to be blooded; but she refused, saying, she required a vent of another kind. She then desired her children to be brought to her, whom she immediately caught in her arms, and having profusely

† What none of all the gods could grant thy vows,
That, Turnus, this auspicious day bestows.

cried

cried over them for several minutes, declared she was easy. After which, she soon regained her usual temper and complexion.

That day they dined together, and in the afternoon they all, except the doctor, visited Captain Atkinson; he repaired to the bailiff's house to visit the sick man, whom he found very chearful, the surgeon having assured him, that he was in no manner of danger.

The doctor had a long spiritual discourse with Robinson, who assured him that he sincerely repented of his past life; that he was resolved to lead his future days in a different manner, and to make what amends he could for his sins to society, by bringing one of the greatest rogues in it to justice. There was a circumstance which much pleased the doctor, and made him conclude that, however Robinson had been corrupted by his old master, he had naturally a good disposition. This was, that Robinson declared he was chiefly induced to the discovery by what had happened at the pawnbroker's, and by the miseries which he there perceived he had been instrumental in bringing on Booth and his family.

The next day Booth and his wife, at the doctor's instance, dined with Colonel James and his lady, where they were received with great civility, and all matters were accommodated, without Booth ever knowing a syllable of the challenge, even to this day.

The doctor insisted very strongly on having Miss Harris taken into custody; and said, if she was his sister, he would deliver her to justice. He added besides, that it was impossible to screen her, and carry on the prosecution, or, indeed, recover the estate. Amelia at last begged the delay of one day only, in which time she wrote a letter to her sister, informing her of the discovery, and the danger in which she stood; and begged her earnestly to make her escape, with many assurances that she would never suffer her to know any distress. This letter she sent away express, and it had the desired effect: for Miss Harris, having received sufficient

information

information from the attorney to the ſame purpoſe, immediately ſet out for Pool, and from thence to France, carrying with her all her money, moſt of her clothes, and ſome few jewels. She had, indeed, packed up plate and jewels to the value of two thouſand pounds and upwards. But Booth, to whom Amelia communicated the letter, prevented her, by ordering the man that went with the expreſs (who had been a ſerjeant of the foot-guards, recommended to him by Atkinſon) to ſuffer the lady to go whither ſhe pleaſed, but not to take any thing with her except her clothes, which he was carefully to ſearch. Theſe orders were obeyed punctually, and with theſe ſhe was obliged to comply.

Two days after the bird was flown, a warrant from the lord chief juſtice arrived to take her up, the meſſenger of which returned with the news of her flight, highly to the ſatisfaction of Amelia, and conſequently of Booth; and indeed not greatly to the grief of the doctor.

About a week afterwards, Booth and Amelia, with their children, and Captain Atkinſon and his lady, all ſet forwards together for Amelia's houſe, where they arrived amidſt the acclamations of all the neighbours, and every public demonſtration of joy.

They found the houſe ready prepared to receive them by Atkinſon's friend, the old ſerjeant, and a good dinner prepared for them by Amelia's old nurſe, who was addreſſed with the utmoſt duty by her ſon and daughter, moſt affectionately careſſed by Booth and his wife, and by Amelia's abſolute command, ſeated next to herſelf at the table; at which, perhaps, were aſſembled ſome of the beſt and happieſt people then in the world.

CHAP. IX.

In which the Hiſtory is concluded.

HAVING brought our hiſtory to a concluſion, as to thoſe points in which we preſume our reader was chiefly intereſted, in the foregoing chapter; we ſhall in

in this, by way of epilogue, endeavour to satisfy his curiosity, as to what hath since happened to the principal personages of whom we have treated in the foregoing pages.

Colonel James and his lady, after living in a polite manner for many years together, at last agreed to live in as polite a manner asunder. The colonel hath kept Miss Matthews ever since, and is at length grown to doat on her (though now very disagreeable in her person, and immensely fat) to such a degree, that he submits to be treated by her in the most tyrannical manner.

He allows his lady eight hundred pounds a year, with which she divides her time between Tunbridge, Bath, and London, and passes about nine hours in the twenty four at cards. Her income is lately increased by three thousand pounds, left her by her brother, Colonel Bath, who was killed in a duel about six years ago, by a gentleman who told the colonel he differed from him in opinion.

The noble peer and Mrs. Ellison have been both dead several years, and both of the consequences of their favourite vices; Mrs. Ellison having fallen a martyr to her liquor, and the other to his amours; by which he was at last become so rotten, that he stunk above ground.

The attorney, Murphy, was brought to his trial at the Old Bailey; where after much quibbling about the meaning of a very plain act of parliament, he was at length convicted of forgery, and was soon afterwards hanged at Tyburn.

The witness for some time seemed to reform his life, and received a small pension from Booth: after which he returned to vicious courses, took a purse on the highway, was detected and taken, and followed the last steps of his old master. So apt are men, whose manners have been once thoroughly corrupted, to return, from any dawn of amendment, into the dark paths of vice.

As

As to Miſs Harris, ſhe lived three years with broken heart at Boulogne, where ſhe received annua fifty pounds from her ſiſter, who was hardly prevai on by Dr. Harriſon not to ſend her a hundred, and t died in a moſt miſerable mann

Mr. Atkinſon, upon the whole, hath led a v happy life with his wife, thoug hath been ſometi obliged to pay proper homag to her ſuperior und ſtanding and knowledge. This, however, is chearfu ſubmitted to, and ſhe makes him proper returns fondneſs. They have two fin boys, of whom t are equally fond. He is lately advanced to the r of captain; and laſt ſummer both he and his wife p a viſit of th months to Booth and his wife.

Dr. Harriſon is grown old in years, and honou beloved and reſpected by all his pariſhioners, and by his neighbours. He divides his time between pariſh, his old town, and Booth's; at which laſt p he had, two years ago, a gentle fit of the g being the firſt attack of that diſtemper. During fit, Amelia was his nurſe, and her two elder dau ters ſat up alternately with him for a whole we The eldeſt of thoſe girls, whoſe name is Amelia, is favourite; ſhe is the picture of her mother, and it thought the doctor hath diſtinguiſhed her in his wi for he hath declared that he will leave his whole fortu except ſome few charities, among Amelia's children.

As to Booth and Amelia, Fortune ſeems to h made them large amends for the tricks ſhe played th in their youth. They have, ever ſince the above per of this hiſtory, enjoyed an uninterrupted courſe health and happineſs. In about ſix weeks after Boot firſt coming into the country, he went to London, paid all his debts of honour; after which, and a of two days only, he returned into the country, hath never ſince been thirty miles from home. He h two boys and four girls: the eldeſt of the boys, he w hath made his appearance in this hiſtory, is juſt co

fro